



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





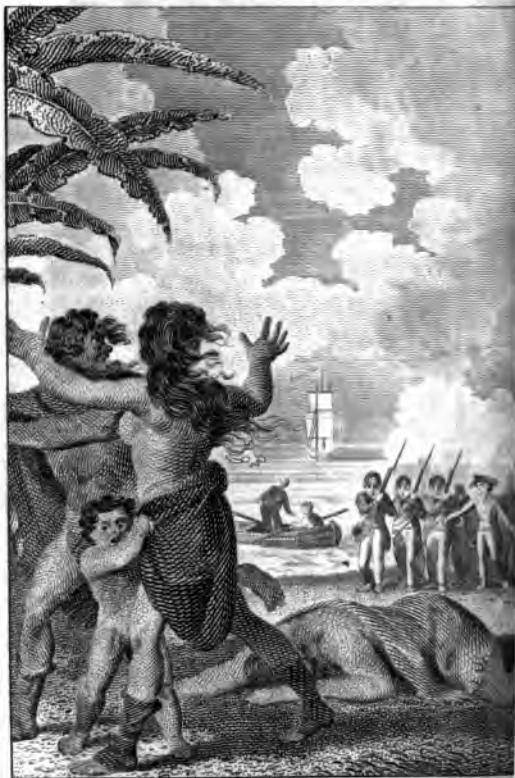
By the KING'S BARGEHOUSE near LAMBETH CHURCH

2031 f 9.









Corbould del.

Taylor

*'Palagonians, alarmed at the
discharge of Musketry?'* Page 39.

Published Decr 24. 1796. by E. Newbery, corner of St Pauls.

HISTORICAL ACCOUNT
OF THE MOST CELEBRATED
VOYAGES,
TRAVELS, AND DISCOVERIES,
FROM THE
TIME OF COLUMBUS
TO THE
PRESENT PERIOD.

“Non apud inde tulit collectas sedula formæ.” Ovid:

By WILLIAM MAJOR, LL.D.

VOL. V.

L O N D O N:
PRINTED FOR E. NEWBERRY,
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH-YARD.

1796.



CONTENTS OF VOL. V.

VOYAGE of Mr. Grose, to the East Indies,	Page 1
<i>Voyage of the Honourable Commodore John</i>	
<i>Byron, round the World, - - -</i>	21
<i>Voyage of Captain Wallis, round the Globe, - -</i>	55
<i>Voyage of Captain Carteret, in the Swallow</i>	
<i>Sloop, round the World, - - -</i>	95
<i>Voyage of M. Bougainville, round the Globe;</i>	
<i>undertaken by the Order of the French King,</i>	123
<i>Voyage of the Honourable Captain Phipps, towards</i>	
<i>the North Pole; with a brief View of the</i>	
<i>Attempts at discovering a North east Pas-</i>	
<i>sage to China and Japan.</i>	227



VOYAGE OF
MR. GROSE,
 TO THE
 EAST INDIES.

IN the present improved state of navigation, distance sinks and difficulty is overcome. A voyage to the East Indies, at this period, excites little more attention than a passage to Hamburgh; and seldom affords occurrences that can engage the attention of the curious, or reward the pains of the inquisitive. Hence voyages to this part of the globe are not often published; but as that now under consideration exhibits a general view of our trade and settlements in the oriental regions, almost half a century back, it cannot fail to interest those who love to contemplate the progress of commerce, aided by the encroachments of power. Some of our early voyages to the east we have already detailed; they were interesting from their novelty; while Mr. Grose's narrative will serve as an intermediate link, to connect the past with the present times.

Our author having entered into the service of the East India Company in the character of a writer, embarked on board the *Lord Anson*, Captain *Foulis*, one of the company's ships, bound for *Bombay and China*, in March 1750; and it

Vol. V. B 1a

same month left the Downs. For four months nothing material occurred to claim notice; their voyage was prosperous; and the first land they made was Johanna, one of the Comoro Islands between the continent of Africa and Madagascar.

Nothing can be more delightful to the sense than to enjoy this beautiful island, after a long continuance at sea. Its very appearance is charming. High hills covered with trees slope down to the beach; and the whole scene has a peculiarly romantic character, which borrows nothing from art.

Here the ship came to an anchor on the 28th of July, and was immediately surrounded by canoes, bringing refreshments from the shore; each striving to get before the other, to vend their commodities. Most of these canoes had outleaguers formed of poles laid across, to prevent their upsetting. Their large vessels, called Panguays, are raised some feet on the sides with branches of trees and reeds, bound together with small cord and rendered water proof by being plaistered over with a resinous substance. Few carry more than two sails, made either of sheer-grass, or cocoa-nut leaves matted together.

The Comoro Isles take their name from Comoro, the largest of them: they are five in number and all lie opposite to the African shore, between which and Madagascar, is found what is called the Channel of Mosambique. Comoro, the largest island, is little frequented by Europeans, as it furnishes no safe harbours, nor are its natives fond of having any intercourse with strangers. Perhaps *the Portuguese*, in their early voyages, alienated *the affections* of these people by their *cruelties and impositions*, the effects of which have not

been obliterated; and thus, as is frequently the case among these simple natives, all Europeans are considered in the same light. Johanna, however, from the advantage of its situation, supercedes the necessity of ships wishing to touch at the other islands in this group, and leaves their inhabitants at liberty to indulge their prejudices.

Such is the salubrity of the air of Johanna, the purity of the water, and the variety of refreshments with which it abounds, that those who are in the worst stages of that dreadful disease, the scurvy, generally feel the reviving influence of the place soon after they land there; and for the accommodation of such, it is usual to erect tents on shore as soon as ships arrive.

The town of Johanna is about a mile from the place where the tents are usually pitched, and is composed of about two hundred houses and huts. Some, which belong to the king and the principal inhabitants, are of stone; but Mr. Grose saw no buildings of more than one story high. Strangers are suffered freely to enter the outer apartment, while the rest are kept private for the families of the owners.

The king's palace is constructed of stone and mud, and the rooms are hung with a coarse chintz, and ornamented with small mirrors. Notwithstanding the little splendor of his residence, his power extends over the whole island, and about thirty thousand people own his sway.

Every ship, on her arrival, is obliged to obtain the king's licence to traffic with the natives; but this grant is seldom attended with difficulty, generally costing no more than a present of a few *muskets, a little gun-powder, some yards of scar*

let cloth, or other European commodities of insignificant value.

The natives are generally tall and well proportioned; they have black piercing eyes, long hair and complexions between the olive and the sallow. Persons of distinction are known by the immordinate length of the nails on their fingers and toes. These they tinge of a yellowish red with the henna, a shrub growing in the marshy spots of the island.

The common people have no other covering than a coarse wrapper round their loins, and skull cap, of any kind of stuff. Those of a high rank have long drawers and a wide sleeved shirt and waistcoat; but few, except of the highest quality, wear turbans. The women dress in short jacket and petticoat, and a kind of long gown and veil. They are fond of ornaments on their arms and wrists, the value of which is demonstrative of the quality of the wearer. Their legs, toes, and fingers are also decorated with chains and rings, and their ears are greatly dilated by ponderous mock-jewels and metal ornaments.

These people chiefly subsist on vegetables and milk, of which they have great abundance. With their sallads they use a kind of syrup prepared from the juice yielded by the cocoa-tree, on infusion. Their language is a corrupt Arabic mixed with the Zanguebar tongue; and their religion is equally a compound of Mahometa and the grossest superstitions. They have generally two or three wives, and as many concubines as they can maintain; and divorces are very frequent for the most trivial causes.

After staying here seven days, they weighed anchor, and on the 28th of August arrived at Bombay, where our author was received with great politeness by the governor, and in a few days entered on the discharge of his office, as one of the clerks of the factory.

Bombay is an island situated in 18 deg. 41 min. north latitude, on the coast of the Hither Peninsula of India, near the province of Decan, the high mountains of which are full in view. It has a most commodious bay, capable of containing an immense number of ships; and is admirably situated for the centre of commerce with the coast of Malabar, the Persian Gulph, and the whole side of the Great Peninsula of India.

From its situation, this island must necessarily be warm; but the hottest weather is moderated by the land and sea breezes, so that the climate is not unpleasant. The greatest caution, however, should be used to avoid the night dews, which are very unfriendly to health. The seasons are generally divided into three, the cool, the hot, and the rainy; or into the dry weather, which lasts eight months, and into the wet which continues about four, with short intermissions. The commencement of the rains is generally ushered in by a violent thunder storm, called the *elephanta*, a name which it probably receives in the oriental style, from a comparison of its force with that of the elephant. This is a pleasing prelude to the temperature that follows, so very refreshing after a long series of excessive heat.

The government of Bombay is subordinate to the directors of the English East India Company, who appoint a president, with a council of nine persons, but all of them are seldom or never c

the spot, being employed as chiefs of the factories, subordinate to the president. The council is generally composed of men who have generally risen in the company's services from the station of writers, and take place according to seniority. The president and members of the spot constitute a regular council, in which nothing is determined according to the plural votes; yet the influence of the president is generally so great as to render opposition ineffectual and dissent useless.

The military and marine force are immediately under the direction of the president who bears the title of general and commanding chief. The common soldiers are a mixture of various nations, with some sent out in the company's ships from England. They are all formed into companies under British officers. In their service may also be included regular companies composed of natives, which are called *fardars*. These use firearms; but are chiefly armed in the country manner with sword and target, and wear the Indian dress.

Nothing has more contributed to render this island populous, than the mildness of the government, and the toleration of all religions, which is so universal, that Roman Catholic churches, Armenian mosques, Gentoo pagodas, and the temple of the Parsees are equally protected. The different persuasions address one supreme deity in their various modes, without interfering with each other, or without molestation from the civil power. This universal toleration forms an agreeable and advantageous contrast to the rigours of the *inquisition*, exercised in the neighbouring kingdom of the Portuguese; whose unchristian

justly rendered them odious, and was one of the principal reasons of the decline of their power in India.

The castle is a regular quadrangle, well built of stone. The town is surrounded by a wall, and a ditch which can be filled at pleasure by admitting the sea. This renders it one of the strongest places subject to the company. Out-forts and redoubts are likewise constructed on different parts of the island.

In a spacious area before the fort stands the English church. The sides of this area are planted with trees, with the houses of the principal English inhabitants behind. Though these buildings are generally of one floor, they are well built, and are frequently white-washed on the outside, which has a clean but glaring appearance, injurious to the sight. Glass windows are but little used; the sashes being commonly paneled with transparent oyster shells cut into form, which admit sufficient light, and serve to exclude the heat. The flooring is composed of stucco of burned shells, so extremely hard and durable, and capable of taking such a fine polish, that it reflects like a mirror.

The habitations of the black merchants, however, are very poor and ill built; and the windows small and ill-distributed. The pagodas of the Gentoos are likewise inelegant structures, with scarcely any other light than what is admitted by the door, opposite to which the principal idol is placed. These religious buildings are generally among trees, and in the vicinity of water.

The most considerable part of the island is occupied by cocoa-nut groves, which, constituting the principal landed property, are planted where

ever the soil and situation are favourable to their growth. These trees are easily cultivated; and a person who possesses two hundred of them is reputed to be in comfortable circumstances.

Bombay also contains some fields of rice, occasionally interspersed with palms. These trees yield, by incision, the liquor called toddy, of which arrack is made, which is esteemed preferable to that produced from the cocoas. In short, every spot of this delightful island is cultivated to the best advantage; and yet the produce is much unequal to the supply of the inhabitants. For this island, whose insalubrity used to carry terror to the heart of strangers, is now no longer dreaded; nor, if we may credit our author, is it at all unfavourable to health, provided some regard is paid to temperance, which is a necessary object to be attended to in every climate.

Mr. Grose mentions several small islands in the vicinity of Bombay, such as Old Woman's Island, Butcher's Island, and Caranja; but the only island that furnishes any thing worthy of observation is Elephanta. This is about three miles in circumference, and consists almost wholly of a mountain, replete with the most singular artificial curiosities of all Indostan. On the side of the hill, near the landing place, appears an elephant rudely carved in stone, of the natural size and colour, which at a distance may be mistaken for the real animal. On the back of this elephant was formerly placed a young one in a standing position, which appears to have been hewn from the same stone; but has long been broken off. No tradition is so ancient *as to give any account of the time and purpose for which this elephant was carved.*

On ascending farther up the hill we are conducted to the entrance of a stupendous temple, hewn out of the solid rock. It forms an oblong square, about eighty or ninety feet long and forty broad. The roof is cut flat, and about ten feet high, and is supported at an equal distance from the sides and from each other, by two regular rows of pillars, of a singular construction. They are very massy and thick in proportion to their height; and their capitals bear some resemblance to a round cushion, pressed by the weight of the superincumbent mountain, of which they constitute a part.

At the farther end of this temple are three gigantic figures, the face of one of which is at least five feet long and proportionably broad; but these images are much disfigured by the blind fury of the Portuguese, who could endure the sight of no other idols but their own. About two-thirds of the way up the temple, are two doors fronting each other, which conduct to smaller grotts, that open upon the hill. By the doorway, on the right hand, are also several mutilated figures, single, and in groups; particularly one, bearing some similitude to the story of Solomon's judgment between the two women who claimed the live child. The doorway on the left hand opens into an area of about twenty feet in length and twelve in breadth, at the upper end of which, on the right, is a colonnade, covered at the top, which is ten or twelve feet deep, and corresponds with the breadth of the area. This joins to an apartment adorned with regular architecture, forming an oblong square with a door in perfect symmetry.

The whole is executed in a taste very different from the most ancient monuments of Gent magnifice

magnificence. It is remarkable, that round the cornices are some paintings, the colours of which still remain very vivid and fresh. The era of this extraordinary fabric is wholly unknown. The most probable conjecture is, that it was formed by the aborigines of the country; and that the religion of the Gentoos has undergone some considerable revolution; since those of the present age have not the least tradition for its origin, or any veneration for the place, except what arises from its unquestionable antiquity.

On the most sultry summer days there cannot be imagined a more cool and pleasant retreat than this. Though the air may be glowing like fire without, the cave is constantly refreshed with a sensible coolness. The three apertures, not only afford a sufficient light, but a thorough draught of air of a pleasant temperature.

This small island, however, contains nothing else worthy of observation: it has only two or three huts upon it, and not a drop of spring water.

To the northward of Elephanta is the fertile island of Salfett, than which it is impossible to conceive a more charming spot. It is twenty miles long, and, on a medium, eight or nine broad. The soil is very rich, and capable of producing all manner of tropical fruits, and is furnished with abundance of game. This island is, likewise, remarkable for several temples cut in the rock, supposed contemporary with those of Elephanta, but neither equal them in magnitude or workmanship.

The peninsula bordering on Bombay is, in a manner, joined to it by two forts. It is inhabited by the Marattas, a powerful Indian tribe, sub-
jed

ject to a king or chief. They are generally a personable people; their complexions vary from a dark to a light brown; and it is said that the farther they are removed from the sea coast, the fairer they are. Their features are generally regular, and even delicate. They shave their heads, except a lock in the middle, which they suffer to grow to its full length and tie up.

The women are generally very handsome, while the bloom of youth continues; but this is of short duration. Few preserve their charms or their vivacity to the age of thirty, when they are generally past parturition.

The Marrattas are equally bred to agriculture as to arms; but their military pay is extremely low, and is not defrayed in specie, but in the principal necessaries of life. They have, however, extended their dominions by the sword, and by encouraging the services of Europeans, have acquired some knowledge in the use of firearms, and in tactics. But still their principal reliance is on their native weapons, the sword and target.

Their swords are of excellent temper, and far superior to the generality of those manufactured in Europe. Their targets are circular, rising in the middle almost to a point, and being hard, light, smooth, and well varnished, are capable of turning a musket ball at some distance.

The diet of these people is very simple. A little rice, and a leathern flask for water, are all that is necessary. The officers fare little better than the men, especially during their expeditions, which they conduct with amazing rapidity and address.

The Marattas affect the appearance of the utmost poverty in their domestic economy and dress.

to escape the rapaciousness of their government, which preys without mercy on any subject known to be rich. This has occasioned immense treasures to be buried, which are thus lost both to the oppressors and the oppressed.

The chief generally keeps his court, or more properly speaking, his military head quarters, at the Fort of Raree, in the mountains of Decan. This fort is esteemed one of the most impregnable in the world; being fortified by a high mound of rocks, so steep as to be accessible by one narrow path only. Within this compass is land enough to produce grain for the whole garrison; but large magazines render it unnecessary to depend on any contingent supply. Indeed a very small number of men is sufficient to defend a place so strong by nature; and consequently the quantity of provisions they require is not great, particularly among a people temperate and abstemious in the extreme.

The Marattas, in general, have a high opinion of judicial astrology; and are very superstitious observers of good and bad days. They are of the Gentoo persuasion, but to their honour, they grant an unlimited indulgence to all other religions; maintaining that a diversity of modes of worship is agreeable to the God of the universe; that all prayers offered by man, are rendered equally acceptable by the sincerity of the intention; and that the forms of religion, being merely accidental, all change is a needless experiment. Hence, instead of persecuting other religions, they are averse to the admission of profelytes into their own.

We shall now follow our author in a concise account of the other possessions and settlements belonging

belonging to the East India Company, at the period he wrote. It would be no easy task at this moment to describe the whole with a minutencis equal to their importance.

The most westerly of the settlements belonging to this wealthy and powerful body of merchants is Mocha, a city seated at the entrance of the Red Sea, in 13 deg. 11 min. north latitude. The trade here is very considerable in coffee and other commodities; but the exactions of the Arab princes considerably diminish the profits.

The next settlement to the east is Gombroon, on the coast of Persia, justly accounted one of the greatest emporiums of the east. The English first began to settle here about 1613; when as a reward for the services they performed against the Portuguese, Shah Abas granted them half the revenues of the port. This revenue, however, was at last reduced to one thousand tomans annually, equal to 3333l. 6s. 8d. sterling; but even this has been ill paid. The dreadful ravages that have for so many years laid waste all Persia, have been very injurious to the company; nevertheless they still maintain a noble factory here, which is the centre of the Persian commerce, and the medium of exchange with Europe, for a prodigious quantity of commodities.

On the western coasts of India, they possess forts, factories, or settlements, at Baroach, Swally, Surat, Bombay, Dabul, Carwar, Tellicherry, Anjengo, and Conymere, all on the Malabar shore.

Indeed the English, French, and Dutch, have as it were lined the coast of Malabar with their fortified settlements and factories. Some they obtained by force, others by address; but in general the natives are not averse to these establishments.

ments, as they afford them occasional protection against their enemies, and supply them with commodities they want in exchange for their native productions.

It more frequently happens that the country powers receive than give offence. The European governors, misled by private passions, prejudices, and interests, too frequently engage their principals in expensive and dishonourable feuds or wars, the motives to which they pervert or shew through a false medium. The Indian princes, seldom a match for the European artillery and discipline, on conceiving any disgust or resentment, shew much ingenuity in retaliating injuries without risking too much. The trade of that nation is sure to be cramped that offended them; and frequently it is turned into a new channel, to effectuate which the jealous and selfish policy of the different European competitors furnishes an easy opportunity.

On the Coromandel coast, or the eastern shore of India, stands Madras, or Fort St. George, one of the capitals of the English company's dominions in the Indies. It is, however, situated on one of the most incommodious spots imaginable; the sea beats with incessant violence on the beach; there is no fresh water within less than a mile, and in the rainy season it is subject to inundations; while the weather from April to September is so intolerably hot, that the sea breezes alone can render it habitable.

The town is divided into two parts; that inhabited by the Europeans, is called the *White Town*, and is walled round. Except on two points, it is incapable of being attacked. There are two churches, one for the English, the other
fo

those of the Roman Catholic communion. The government of both towns is absolutely vested in the governor, who likewise is commander in chief. All other affairs are managed by the governor and council conjointly. The company

have their mint here for coining money, from which is imported from Europe, into rupees, which affords them a considerable revenue. They also have gold in pagodas of different denominations and value.

The diamond mines of Golconda lie within a short journey from this place. When a person goes thither, in order to obtain diamonds, he first obtains a piece of ground to dig in, and then informs the king's officers, appointed for that service of his intentions. The money stipulated for the privilege being paid, the ground is railed in, and sentinels placed round it. All jewels above the weight of sixty grains, belong to the sovereign, and frauds in this respect are punished with death. In this kind of adventure, some are fortunate enough to gain much property, while others lose only their money but their labour.

The settlement of Fort St. George produces much of its own growth, and has few manufactures for foreign trade. The Moors, Gentoos, and Mahomedans have monopolized the foreign commerce which used to be carried on to Pegu; while the Europeans are chiefly confined to ship building. A foreign trade is, however, carried on to a considerable extent, to China, Mocho, Persia, and the Indian mandel side; so that Fort St. George, like Amsterdam, is enriched by supplying foreign markets with foreign productions.

Twenty years ago the population of this colony was computed at eighty thousand persons, of whom

whom no more than five hundred were Europeans.

Bengal is the most eastern province of the Mogul's dominions, and is annually overflowed by the Ganges, near the efflux of which river it lies, and is bounded by the provinces of Patna and Jesnat on the north; the kingdom of Aracan on the east; the Bay of Bengal and the Province of Orixá on the south; and by the Provinces of Narvar and Malva on the west; extending above four hundred miles in length, and three hundred in breadth.

The Bay of Bengal is the most spacious and deep in the known world, extending from the south part of Coromandel to the River Huegely; in which space it receives the great river Ganges and Guena, from the west side; as also the Aracan and Avat from the east side. The River Ganges, one of the most celebrated in the globe, and esteemed sacred by the Gentoos, rises in the mountains of Nigracut, part of Great Tartary, and after receiving many tributary streams in its course of three thousand miles, falls into the Gulph of Bengal by so many estuaries, that travellers are not agreed as to their number. However, the common passage for European shipping is up the River Huegely, one of the most western branches.

The foreign and domestic trade of Bengal are very considerable, and extend to many nations of the east. All the Europeans too, who have settlements in the Indies, send their commodities to Bengal, and it is with the merchandise of this province that they make their principal returns to Europe. The chief articles of traffic at Bengal, are silks, cottons, pepper, rice, salt-petre, dying woods, sumlac, wax, indigo, camphor, and aloes.

The

The places of the greatest commerce, where the English, French, and Dutch, have their most valuable establishments, are Calcutta, Cossimbuzar, Huegely, Pipley, and Balasore. The capital of the viceroy is Muxadabad, which is large and populous. Fort William, or Calcutta, is the capital of the English in Bengal. The English East India Company are believed to possess the best part of the trade carried on in Sumatra. Their factories, on the coasts of that island, are Mocha, Bantal, Cattoun, Bencoolen, Marlborough Fort, and Sillebar. The company also trade to Tonquin and China.

The English and Dutch are the only nations excluded, by the Spaniards, from trading to the Manillas. In Japan there is not the least vestige of any British commerce; all the commodities of that empire with which Europe is supplied, being furnished by means of the Chinese and Dutch. The latter are the only privileged nation of Europe to trade there.

The English East India Company, annually, employ many sail of fine capital ships, each of five hundred tons* burden, mounting thirty guns, and manned with one hundred mariners.

Mr. Grose makes the subsequent reflections on the East India trade, the policy of which must be allowed to remain in its full force, though we cannot entirely subscribe to the equity of the principles he lays down.

In the East Indies, says he, it is scarcely possible to carry on a commerce on any other than a precarious, dishonourable, disadvantageous footing, unless

* At this time, few of the East India Company's ships are less than double that tonnage, and many are much larger.

a state of force procures a respect to, or confidence in, our arms; the country governments of India being constitutionally such, as seldom to neglect occasions of oppression or plunder, where they have neither opposition nor vengeance to fear. Nor do they ever solidly bestow their countenance or friendship, but where they can depend on a protection in their revolutions, to which their despotic principles naturally expose them. The merchants, especially, prefer dealing with that nation which they see the most powerful and able to shelter them from the tyranny of their countrymen. Thence arises their partiality to our government, and to which they are of such essential benefit.

As mere traders, the English could never have got the footing they have, if they had not added the martial to the commercial character. This is so true, that the special privileges, fortified settlements, and favourable grants obtained from the several princes of India, will manifestly appear from their original dates, to have been owing to the figure our nation formerly made in war; when its victories over the Portuguese, who sunk as fast as we rose, gave it such reputation in the eyes of the natives, as induced them to grant almost whatever was desired. And indeed it is principally on that old foundation, that the extension of our commerce has since been built. I say principally, because no doubt, our frank, unaffected, and generous national character, amidst all the faults of some who have been invested with power in the east, may be said, *without any partiality*, to have made a very favourable impression on the natives, when contrasted *with the senseless, sanguinary bigotry of the Portuguese*

self; with the unsociable reserve, imperious
 lust, and cupidity of the Dutch, and with the
 more-refined designing politeness of the French.
 One reason, that has tended to the elevation of
 the Dutch East India Company, is its immense
 power, and almost sovereign dominion over all
 ports, provinces, and colonies it possesses. It
 sends and receives embassies from sovereign kings
 and princes, makes peace and war at pleasure;
 by its own authority administers justice, and
 punishes and remits offences. And though the
 authority of the States General is allowed, it is
 seldom exerted, and perhaps might be disputed.
 The power of the Dutch, too, both by sea and
 land, is very great in the East; where, by force,
 treaties, and alliances, they have raised them-
 selves to distinction, in spite of the combined ef-
 forts of the other European nations*.

The East Indies, observes Mr. Grose, is a bot-
 tle-neck for bullion, which can never circulate
 back to Europe; and when bullion fails, that
 trade must cease. That this is the present situa-
 tion of all the kingdoms of Europe, with respect
 to the trade they carry on with the East Indies, is
 observed by the soundest politicians, and the most
 judicious observers. This passive commerce for
 curiosities or elegancies, swallows up almost all the
 advantages which the Europeans derive from
 America, by the importation of gold and silver;
 and it is justly become a question, whether the
 money that flows in from the New World is more

Our author's following reflections, on the dangerous power
 monopolies of the Dutch in the East Indies, seem to be now
 obsolete. *The sun of Holland is perhaps for ever set in both
 hemispheres.*

consider-

considerable than what is exported to the oriental regions.

The philosophic Montesquieu, in his Spirit of Laws, not only admits the position, but strengthens its truth by his remarks. "We at present, says he, carry on the trade of the Indies merely by means of the silver we send thither, which is exchanged for merchandizes brought to the west. Every nation that has traded to the Indies, has constantly carried out bullion, and brought merchandise in return. It is nature herself that produces this effect. The Indians have their arts adapted to their manner of living. Our luxury cannot be theirs, nor their wants ours. Their climate scarcely demands, or permits any thing produced by us. They go in a great measure naked; such clothes as they use, the country itself furnishes; and their religion, which is deeply rooted, gives them an aversion for those things that serve for our nourishment. Therefore they want nothing but our bullion, to serve as the medium of value; and for this they give us in return merchandise, with which the frugality of the people and the nature of the climate, furnish them with a super-abundance."

VOYAGE OF
THE HONOURABLE
COMMODORE JOHN BYRON,
ROUND THE WORLD.

THE Honourable John Byron early entered into the naval service of his country, and did not long escape some of the most signal calamities incident to his profession. When a midshipman, he was wrecked in the *Wager* sloop, one of Anson's squadron, on the coast of Patagonia; and after a series of extraordinary adventures, which he has painted with much feeling and animation, at last reached his native land. By successive promotions, he rose to the highest rank in the sea service, and for some time commanded a British fleet in the West Indies; but he was, generally, more distinguished for intrepidity and good conduct, than for that success and fortune which should be their constant concomitants. The lives of some men present a scene of honourable activity, generally terminating in disappointment; while others, devoid of energy or merit, by fortuitous circumstances, rise into fame, and are crowned with honours and rewards. The present voyage, however, will convey Byron's name to posterity, among those of our celebrated navigators; nor will the narrative of his former shipwre

shipwreck cease to interest, while the human heart is susceptible of sympathetic impressions.

His present majesty having, early after his accession, shewn a love for science, and a zeal for discovery, an expedition was projected for the latter purpose, to the South Seas; and Captain Byron was pitched on to conduct it. This gentleman was appointed to the command of the Dolphin ship of war, in quality of commodore; and the Tamar frigate, Captain Mouatt, was commissioned to attend him.

Those vessels being equipped, set sail from the Downs on the 1st of June 1764; but before they cleared the Channel the Dolphin ran aground, without, however, receiving any material damage; so that the commodore was able to prosecute his voyage by the 3d of July.

Shaping their course for Madeira, they anchored in Fonchiale Bay on the 30th, and paid and received the usual salutes. On the 19th of August they again set sail; and passing in sight of Palma, came to an anchor in Port Praya on the 30th of the same month.

Having taken in water and other refreshments, they quitted the port with all possible expedition, in order to avoid the tornados and hurricanes which generally rage in those latitudes, from the month of August to the middle of the winter season.

Arriving in the road of Rio de Janeiro, without any accident, the commodore waited on the governor, who received him in state. Fifteen guns were fired in honour of the British flag; and his excellency afterwards returned the visit on board the Dolphin, where he was entertained in a manner suitable to his rank. As many of the

the Tamar's people were sick, they were furnished with lodgings on shore. The Dolphin's crew, by the liberal use of fresh meat and vegetables, were kept in tolerable health. However, while the ships lay in this harbour, the Portuguese found means to decoy away nine of the Dolphin's, and five of the Tamar's, people; the latter were recovered; but the commodore could never hear of his men. They were, probably, carried up the country in a state of intoxication, and detained there till the English vessels departed.

The commodore weighed anchor, and sailed from thence on the 16th of October, and a few days after, he explained to the crews the nature of their voyage and the objects in view, of which they had hitherto been ignorant. As a reward and a stimulus to good behaviour, such as distinguished themselves were, by order of the lords of the admiralty, to receive double pay and other emoluments. The commodore was heard with marks of the highest satisfaction, and the men promised prompt obedience to their officers, and a willingness to promote the honour and service of their country to the utmost of their power.

A violent storm overtook them on the 29th, during the fury of which they were obliged to throw four of their guns overboard. After this subsided, they began to reach the latitudes in which cold is severe; and though it was only the end of October, the men began to feel the want of some additional clothing, of which the commodore had taken the wise precaution to lay in a proper supply.

On the 2d of November, the different officers received their commissions, and took the customary oath. The ship was now surrounded by a

of birds, and the water beginning to be discoloured, gave certain indications of land. On 11th, they imagined they saw land ahead of them, but it proved to be that common deception called a fog-bank *, and suddenly vanished.

This false appearance of land was succeeded by a violent hurricane. In the afternoon of 13th, the sky grew black, and a noise was heard resembling the beating of the sea upon a sandy beach. The birds were observed flying from the point whence the storm proceeded, and screaming with apprehension. It reached the Dolphin before preparations could be made for its approach, and laid her on her side. The first tenant was struck down by the mainsheet, some of his teeth knocked out, and was otherwise hurt. The Tamar, being a little to leeward, only her mainsail split. But considering the violence of this hurricane, it was wonderful she escaped with such immaterial damage.

Steering for Cape Blanco, they came in sight of it on the 17th, and in four days more entered the harbour of Port Desire. In these seas, thousands of seals and penguins surrounded the ships.

The country in the vicinity of Port Desire appeared to the commodore, on landing, like a plain continued down, without either shrub or tree to adorn it. They saw here four guanicoes, near thirteen hands high, and in shape like deer. Proceeding higher up the harbour,

* Among other remarkable deceptions of this kind, the master of a vessel, not many years since, made oath that he had seen an island, with trees growing on it, betwixt Newfoundland and the west of Ireland: some ships searched for it, but it had vanished into air.

came to an island where they killed fifty seals, and found some of them nearly as heavy as English oxen.

Among a variety of birds that they killed, was one that had an eagle's head, with a large comb on it, and a white ruff like a tippet round its neck. The plumage on the back was of a glossy blackness: the legs and talons were formed like those of an eagle; and the expansion of the wings was twelve feet from one extremity to the other.

After experiencing some difficulties, both ships were at length safely moored in the harbour on the 24th, when the commodore went on shore and shot a hare, weighing twenty-six pounds; and saw several others, which appeared as large as fawns. Next day he discovered the barrel of an old musket, stamped with his majesty's broad arrow, and an oar of a singular form. The gun barrel crumbled to dust on being touched. These were probably left by Sir John Narborough.

They saw here the remains of several fires, but no inhabitants. They met, however, with plenty of game; and one of them caught a young guanicoe, which was exceeding beautiful, and appeared very docile. Some of these animals, when full grown, weigh three hundred weight.

On the 27th, they discovered two springs of tolerable water, and next day a tun of it was brought on board. When the commodore next landed, he saw such a number of birds take flight as darkened the sky; nor could the men walk without treading on eggs, some of which they chose to eat, in a state nearly fit for hatching.

Some of the crew being sent ashore for water on the 30th, saw a tiger lying on the ground

ould they rouse him by throwing stones at

When they approached pretty near he got and without offering violence, or seeming to fear, he walked off at his leisure.

The ships got under sail on the 5th of November, with fair and pleasant weather, and a favorable gale. Holding on their course for Pepy's and, which is laid down in 47 deg. south latitude, they could not discover it, though the ships stood so as to take in a prospect of twenty leagues, and the sky was clear. The commodore, now concluding there was no such place, changed his direction, and stood in for the main, to wood and water. A hurricane succeeded on the 15th, and had they not been in want of wood and water, it would have been much safer to have run with it, than beat against it. However, it abated, and on the 18th they again saw land, presenting the same aspect as that round Port Desire. Here they observed white porpoises, spotted with black, pursuing the fish which appeared immensely numerous in those latitudes.

On the 20th, they ran close in shore to Cape Virgin, and came to an anchor. Next day they sailed again, and observing a smoke on the shore, they came to an anchorage nearly opposite to it, at the distance of two miles from the beach.

In this situation the commodore despatched a number of men on horseback, riding to and fro, and waving a white ensign, which he construed into an invitation to land; and as he was anxious to have some intercourse with the natives, he went in a boat, well armed, while the first lieutenant followed in another.

When they approached the shore, the
ed that the horse and foot collected or

point of land that advanced into the sea, might amount to about five hundred ; but though they did not appear to have any weapons, nor to be hostilely disposed, the commodore thought it prudent to make signs to them to withdraw a little, while the party was landing, which they readily understood and complied with. The English being mustered on the beach, Mr. Byron singly advanced, and made signs to the Indians, that one of them should do the same. Accordingly, one of their chiefs came forward, who was nearly seven feet high. One of his eyes was encircled with a streak of black paint, and the other with white ; the rest of his face was painted of various colours ; and the skin of a beast, with the hair turned inwards, depended from his shoulders.

The commodore and the Indian having made their respective compliments, which were mutually unintelligible, they walked together towards the main body of the natives, few of whom were shorter than the chief, nor were the women of inferior proportion. Mr. Byron made signs for them to be seated, which being done, they chaunted in a most plaintive and melancholy tone. The principal difference in their appearance arose from the colour of the paint surrounding their eyes, which was varied as much as possible. In their dress they were nearly alike, except that some wore a kind of boots, with a spur of pointed wood, fastened to each heel.

The commodore having prevailed on some of them, who were still galloping about, to alight and join the rest, distributed some white and yellow beads among them, which they gladly accepted. He then took a piece of ribbon, and putting the end of it into the hands of the first Indi

Indian, continued it along the line as far as it would reach. This done, he cut it between every two with a pair of scissars, and tied the portion of each round his head, which no one attempted to remove. And though the presents were insufficient to allow each a share, no one attempted to press forward, or seemed to envy the superior good fortune of his neighbour.

Among these gigantic people was a woman of the largest size, most hideously painted, whose hair was decorated with beads of blue glass, hanging in two braids down her shoulders, and she wore bracelets of a pale-coloured gold on her arms. One of the men shewed the bowl of a tobacco pipe, formed of red earth, and made signs that he wanted something to fill it. On this the commodore beckoned to the seamen, who still remained drawn up on the beach, three or four of whom instantly running forward, alarmed the Indians, and they were about to retire. Mr. Byron, therefore, ran and stopped the sailors, directing only one of them to come forward, when he had got all the tobacco that could be mustered among them.

This apprehension was removed, and the natives resumed their seats, except an old man, who filled up the interval, till the tobacco arrived, with a song. The tallest among the English were astonished to observe the diminutive appearance they made among the Patagonians, who were broad and muscular in proportion to their height. The commodore having distributed the tobacco, they made signs for him to ride with them to *their huts*; but on his pointing to the ship, *whether he must return*, they sat down again in *apparent concern*.

Their horses, though not of the gigantic size of their riders, seemed to be active and well managed. Their saddles resembled an English pad without stirrups; and the bridle was formed of a thong of leather with a wooden bit. Both men and women rode astride. When the commodore took his leave not one rose, or offered to follow him.

On the 21st of December, they entered the Straights of Magellan, with a view of procuring wood and water, as it was doubtful if they could find Falkland's Island. On this shore they observed a single Indian, who waved his hand till he lost sight of the ship. Next evening six Indians came down to the beach, shouting and making signs of friendship. On the 25th, they saw a point of land near St. George's Island, to which they gave the name of Porpoise Point.

Having cast anchor here, the commodore went in quest of wood and water, which they found in abundance. A fine champaign country lies over the point, the soil of which appeared to be very luxuriant, producing innumerable flowers of great beauty and fragrance, and excellent grass, among which grew some peas in bloom. They saw multitudes of painted geese, so called from their beauty; and they likewise found wild cellery and other useful vegetables.

Many wigwams were situated in the woods near the streams of water, which appeared to have been recently occupied. In a walk of twelve miles, however, they found no place proper to land a boat, on a account of a strong surf. The commodore returned in the evening, and was informed, that such of his men as had employed them-

selves, either in shooting or fishing, had been equally successful. Indeed, the keen air of the climate increased their appetites, and such additional supplies were very acceptable.

On the 26th, they steered for Port Famine, and next day anchored close to the shore. Here they discovered drift wood enough to have supplied one thousand vessels. The commodore proceeded four miles up the river, when he found his course impeded by trees that had fallen across the stream. The banks of this river were clothed with the noblest trees, sufficient to supply masts for the whole British navy. Some of them, indeed, were so large, that four men, joining hand in hand, could not grasp them. These woods abounded in parrots and other beautiful birds. Wild fowl was likewise plentiful, and the seas were replenished with fish.

Mr. Byron and a party going ashore, were caught in a violent rain, and stopping where some Indians had kindled a fire, they added some fuel to dry their clothes, when another fire was instantly made on the opposite coast of Terra del Fuego, which they imagined to be a signal, on the supposition that they were Indians. The hills here were craggy, and wholly covered with snow; but the plains were embellished with flowers of the greatest fragrance and beauty.

Near where the ships rode at anchor was a hill cleared of wood, which they imagined to have been a Spanish settlement. By the 4th of January 1765, both ships having taken in their wood and water, sailed in quest of Falkland's Islands; *but the wind dying away, they were obliged to stop till the 6th.* No sooner had they again set sail,

than the Dolphin struck on a bank; but it being a perfect calm, they fortunately got off the return of the tide.

They descried land on the 12th, which they called De Wert's Islands. This land consisted of mountainous and barren rocks, that sheltered an immense number of birds. Here seals and whales were seen sporting round the ship. On the 14th, they discovered a flat island covered with large tufts of grass; and on the following day the commodore sent two boats to examine the opening which had the appearance of a harbour, and this they found commodious, beyond their most sanguine hopes. Soon after this, however, they entered another harbour, to which Mr. Egmont gave the name of Port Egmont, from the gentleman who then presided at the board of admiralty.

This harbour is represented as one of the finest in the world, and sufficiently capacious to contain the whole navy of England in perfect security.

Every part of it supplies fresh water; and every choice species of wild fowl occupy the shores. Indeed, it was nothing unusual to knock down a seventy or eighty geese at a time with shot; so that the sailors were almost surfeited with the delicacies of this kind. Seals, penguins, sea-lions likewise abound. The woods produced sorrel and wild celeriac in plenty.

While they lay here, the commodore was unexpectedly attacked by a sea-lion, and extricated himself from the danger with great difficulty. In these formidable animals they had several instances. They were so fierce, that they seldom seemed to be attacked; but if they were, they not only assisted each other with great resolution,

lution. They burrowed in the ground and subsisted on seals and penguins. To get rid of such disagreeable company, they set fire to the grass, which burnt with such force that the country was all in a blaze for some days, and these animals were seen running in every direction, to escape its fury.

The soil of the circumjacent land is a clay under a black mould. Byron conjectured this might be the same place as Pele mentioned in Cowley's voyage; however, he took possession of the harbour and the surrounding islands, for the sovereign of Great Britain, in the appellation of Falkland's Islands, in honour of the surgeon of the Tamar, fenced off a track of land, near the place, which he planted with vegetables for the use of future voyagers.

On the 27th of July they left Port Jackson, and the same day they saw a remarkable land, which they distinguished by the name of Cape Tamar; and soon after they passed a point, which they called the Eddystone, near which they called the Cape Dolphin. The distance between the two capes is about eight miles, and forms the northern entrance of the strait between the two principal islands. During this day's run, presented neither mountains nor trees, but only large tufts of grass.

Next day, they sailed through Berkeley Sound, at some distance from the southern extremity of the island, where the sea breaks very high on rocks above the surface. The coast now was very dangerous aspect: rocks and breakers were visible in all directions, and the country appeared desolate and barren. The commodore

to the northward, to avoid the dangers of a lee shore. He computed the whole circumference of Falkland's Islands to be little less than seven hundred miles.

On the 6th of February, they arrived at Port Desire, at the mouth of which they anchored, where they had the pleasure to find the Florida, an expected store-ship from England. The master of the Florida going on board the Dolphin, acquainted the commodore with the bad condition of his ship, on which it was resolved to attempt unloading her in the harbour. The following night proving very tempestuous, the Tamar and Florida were both driven from their moorings, and made signals of distress. They, with great difficulty, escaped being driven on shore; and as this harbour was found inconvenient for unloading the store-ship, all hands were set about repairing her, that she might be able to proceed to the Straights of Magellan.

On the 13th, the Florida was prepared for sea, and ordered to make the best of her way to Port Famine, and next day the Dolphin and Tamar followed. The three succeeding days they observed a strange vessel pursuing the same track, at an equable distance; a circumstance that occasioned much speculation. Byron being obliged to lie by for the Florida, imagined the stranger would speak with him; and, therefore, made the necessary disposition to give her a proper reception. But when he came to an anchor, she did the same. Next morning, however, she got under way, and approached the Dolphin, on which *the commodore* ordered some guns to be got ready. Neither party shewed any colours; but *the Florida*, about this time running aground, str

strange vessel hoisted French colours, and dispatched two boats to her assistance. The commodore now sent two of his boats to the relief of the store-ship, with orders to make proper acknowledgments for the strangers' civility, but on no account to suffer them to board her.

The store-ship being got off, they proceeded till night, when they again cast anchor, and the French ship did the same; but in a situation that shewed her ignorance of the channel. On the 19th, they proceeded on their voyage, the French vessel following them; on which Mr. Byron conjectured, that she came from Falkland's Islands, where there was at that time a French settlement, either to wood, or survey the straits. On the 20th, they reached Port Famine, and having taken out of the Florida as much provision as they could stow, they immediately dispatched her for England, and determined to navigate the other ships through the Straights of Magellan.

On the 28th, they passed the French ship as she lay in a small cove, and near her a quantity of wood, which probably was intended to be transported to the new French settlement. On the commodore's return to England, he found this suspicious vessel was the Eagle, commanded by M. Bougainville.

As they proceeded through the Straights, they had lofty mountains on both sides, covered from top to bottom with snow, and exhibiting the most desolate appearance. On the 1st of March they were followed by some Indian canoes, one of which came on board. This canoe was a wretched piece of work, formed of bark: it carried some of both sexes, who exchanged their bows and arrows for beads and other trinkets. The arrow

arrows were reeds pointed with a green stone. The crew had no other covering but a seal's skin thrown over their shoulders, and they looked very miserable.

When the ship came to an anchor, several of the Indians went on board, and were highly gratified with such trifling presents as the commodore thought proper to bestow on them. It seems their chief subsistence is muscles and berries; and with some of the latter they complimented Mr. Byron, when he returned their visit on shore.

Having escaped the dreadful effects of a storm, on the 3d of March, boats were repeatedly sent out in search of anchorage; and at length the Dolphin was moored near Cape Quod, and the Tamar about six miles to the eastward. This part of the straight being little more than a league broad, and the mountains, which environ it, being of a prodigious height, the whole has a horrid appearance. On the 8th, the commodore went up a deep lagoon under a rock, at the head of which was a fine fall of water, and on the east side were several small coves, calculated for the secure reception of ships of the greatest burthen.

An officer being sent in a boat to reconnoitre the coast, in two days returned with an account, that between them and Cape Upright were five bays, in either of which they might securely anchor. In his excursion the officer met with several Indians, who made him a present of a dog, and one of the women, having an infant at the breast, offered to give it him. The dog, of course, was the only acceptable present.

Winter now commenced with all its severity; and the cold became so intense, that the marines began to suffer severely; when the commodore,

to

to fortify them against the inclemency of the weather, gave every man a warm jacket of wool-len stuff, known by the appropriate name of fear-noughts.

Perceiving that they lost ground in every tack, they came to an anchor on the 16th, but finding the ground unsafe, they weighed again, and every man was under the necessity of being on the deck for many hours, though the rain drenched them in unremitted torrents. All their labour, however, could not enable them to make head against the currents; and after two days of incessant fatigue, they were glad to anchor again in the very same bay they had left.

There was now a succession of rain and storms for ten days. On the 20th, the ship was driven from her moorings; but was soon fortunately restored to her situation. The currents still impeded their progress; but for their comfort, the health and spirits of the crews remained good, notwithstanding their toils, and the unfavourable weather to which they were exposed.

At last they gained sight of the South Sea, which rolled a prodigious swell on them. Having previously sent out some boats to examine the shore, they made sail; and soon finding themselves near land, without any place to anchor, they felt the danger of their situation, and endeavoured to provide against it by every precaution in their power. About seven in the evening the wind blew a perfect hurricane: the rain descended in torrents; and some of the sail rent in pieces. During this tempestuous in which the sea was constantly breaking *them, the ships parted company; and compassed with rocks and breakers, 11*

was extreme. Providentially they escaped, and next morning both vessels came to an anchor.

They had now been twice within four leagues of the western mouth of the straight, and as often driven ten or twelve leagues back again, by the storms and currents; so dangerous is this navigation at an improper season of the year. On the 28th of March the Tamar narrowly escaped being dashed to pieces on the rocks, by the parting of her cable. Next morning the Dolphin weighed anchor; but finding her consort in distress, they were obliged to lie by for the night—a night the most dreadful they had yet experienced. The wind was so violent, that the sea was lifted above the top-mast head, with a noise like thunder. Happily they did not part their cables, or they must have been dashed to pieces against the rocks.

The following day it was almost a perfect calm; but in the evening it rained much, and the storm recommenced. They were therefore obliged to keep their station till the 4th of April, when an officer in the cutter, having found a proper bay to anchor in, they proceeded to occupy it. This gentleman, in his progress, had fallen in with a party of Indians, whose canoe was composed of planks sewed together. They had no covering but a piece of seal's skin thrown over their shoulders. Their food, which was of the coarsest kind, was eaten raw; and their indelicacy of eating it, was equal to its homeliness. One of them was observed to tear a piece of stinking whale's blubber with his teeth, and then to give it to his companions, who passed it on in a similar manner.

When the ships had come to an anchor, and remained with a view of taking in wood and water several of the natives made a fire opposite to

ship, when signals were thrown out to come on board, but they appeared shy. On this the commodore landed and presented them with some trifles, which they gratefully received. He likewise divided some biscuit among them, and was surprised to find, that when a bit happened to fall to the ground, not one of them would stoop to pick it up, without his permission.

At this time several of the sailors being engaged in cutting grafs for a few sheep on board, the Indians instantly ran to their assistance, and tearing it up in large quantities, soon filled the boat. On the commodore's return, they followed in their canoe till they came near the ship, at which they gazed with the utmost astonishment.

Some of these people were at last prevailed on to go on board, when Mr. Byron, with a view to their diversion, directed one of the midshipmen to play on the violin, while some of the sailors danced. The poor Indians were delighted above measure, and one of them, to testify his gratitude, took his canoe, and fetching some red paint, daubed it all over the face of the musician; nor could the commodore, without much difficulty, escape the same compliment. When it was hinted to them that it was time to depart, they obeyed with apparent reluctance.

On the 7th they left this bay, and next day encountered very stormy weather. On the 9th they passed some dangerous rocks, on which the surf beats with prodigious violence. Narborough distinguished them by the appellation of the Judges. This day, contrary to expectation, steady gale at south-west, wafted them on at a rate of nine miles an hour; so that they were

leagues distant from a coast, on which they countered so many perils.

Byron, in order that future navigators may by his experience, recommends it be at the entrance of the Straights of Magellan, in winter, in which case he thinks a fleet might reach them in three weeks. He farther observed

that the facility with which wood and iron may be found, the vast quantities of vegetation on the coast, and fish in the seas, are advantages which render this passage preferable to any at a proper season. It is remarkable, that the protracted passage of seven weeks and two months not a single man was lost or sick.

Byron now bore away for the island of Masafuera and on the 27th endeavoured to land, but was prevented by the violence of the surf. A boat was sent out to examine the coast, which was covered with plenty of fish; and the officer reported, that he had found a bank where they might anchor, in the immediate vicinity of fresh water.

The boats were now sent out to wood and water, their crews having put on cork-jackets to assist them in swimming. In these seas they met a great number of very large sharks, but they were able to escape them. One of these voracious creatures devoured a seal, and devoured it in an instant.

The island abounds in goats; many of which are killed, and their flesh was deemed equal in value to the finest venison. One of them had its throat slit; a proof that he had been caught and killed again. Fish were so plentiful, that with spears and lines only they could soon catch enough to last for two days.

The gunner and one of the seaman, who had been absent, landed in quest of water, being afraid

to venture through the waves, were left ashore all night. The commodore being informed of this circumstance, sent them word, that if the ship should be driven from her moorings, they would infallibly be left behind. On this intimation the gunner swam to the boat, and was taken up; but the sailor, saying that he would rather die a natural death than be drowned, refused to make the attempt, and took a melancholy adieu of his companions. A midshipman, taking a rope in his hand, swam ashore, and remonstrated with the poor tar, on the foolish resolution he had taken; but, being unable to make any impression on him, he seized the opportunity of throwing the rope, in which there was a running knot, round his body, and calling to the boat's crew, they instantly dragged him on board. The man, however, had swallowed so much water, that he appeared to be lifeless; but having suspended him by the heels for a short time, to evacuate the fluid, he was next day restored to health.

The commodore now made a promotion among his officers, appointing Captain Mouatt commander of the Dolphin, under him, and sending his first lieutenant, Mr. Cumming, to the Tamar frigate.

They now sailed in various directions till the 10th of May, when they saw several birds and fishes, which convinced them that they were approaching the land.

Two remarkable birds, as large as geese, with white bodies and black legs, which flew very high confirmed them in their conjecture, that they had *passed some main land or islands.* On the 22 *they saw some tropical birds, and caught to*
bouett

and on the following days they were
ded by flocks of various birds.

his they steered for a small island, of a
ly pleasant appearance. It was encir-
a beach of white sand, and crowned
y trees, whose umbrage extended wide,
ed most beautiful groves, unincumbered
er-wood, and of the most vivid green.

he natives made their appearance, armed
g spears, and kindling large fires, the
re lighted up on a neighbouring island.
aving been sent out to look for anchor-
rned without success. By this time the
id made much progress among the crew,
is mortifying to the last degree, for them
delicacies of the island, without being
each them. Among the rest they saw
ts, whose milk is so salutary in scorbutic
ts; while the shells of turtles strewn
s. All this while, the natives keeping
f the ship, danced, shouted, and bran-
eir spears, occasionally falling flat back-
which was interpreted into a menace of
on to their enemies. They also fixed
s in the sand, before which they kneeled,
ne act of devotion to their idols.

less of the empty threats of the natives,
odore thought proper to sail round the
nd again sent out boats to sound. On
indians raised a terrible outcry, pointing
pears, and posing large stones in their
The sailors made all possible signs of
p, and threw some trifles on shore; but
es would not deign to regard them. In-
ran into the water with an apparent
of hauling the boats on the strand

which irritated the sailors to such a degree, that they were with difficulty prevented from firing. As no landing-place could be found, the commodore proceeded to the neighbouring island, and brought to, at the distance of a quarter of a league from the shore.

Here likewise the natives appeared in hostile array; but a cannon being fired over their heads, they retired into the woods. The boats being sent out, returned without being able to find any landing place on this island likewise, whence Byron named it the Isle of Disappointment.

On the 9th of June they discovered a low lying island, covered with various kinds of trees, among which was the cocoa-nut. The shore was begirt with a rock of red coral. The natives, having first kindled large fires, ran along the shore armed in vast multitudes. The vessels now brought to at a small inlet, opening into a salt water lake of some extent. On the shores of this, they saw a little town embosomed in cocoa-nut trees. The ships advancing to the mouth of the inlet, some hundreds of the natives, preceded by an officer, carrying a pole with a piece of mat instead of a flag, ranged themselves up to the waists in water, making a hideous noise; while a number of large canoes were brought down from the lake.

Two boats having been sent out in quest of soundings, the natives approached, and attempted to draw them on shore, though the crews made every possible demonstration of friendship. Several of the Indians leaping from the rocks, swam towards the ships; one of them sprang into the Tamar's boat, and snatched up a jacket, with which he immediately dived; another attempted to steal a hat, but

he lost his prize through ignorance, as he let it downwards instead of upwards.

They now sailed westward, and soon discovered their island, distant four leagues. The Indians led their course in two double canoes, each containing thirty armed men, and the ships' boats followed considerably to leeward and exposed to insults, the commodore made a signal for them to begin the attack, when the natives immediately rowed away, and dashed through the surf on the shore, still pursued by the English.

They now armed themselves with stones and clubs, as if determined, like brave men, to save their country from invasion; but the English crews firing, killed two or three of them, of whom did not fall till he had received several balls through his body. The boats now went off the two canoes, unmolested, as trophies of their victory. These vessels consisted of two planks sewed together, with a strip of tortoise-shell fixed over each seam; their bottoms were flat and narrow; and being double, they were filled with timbers so as to leave a space of six feet between the two canoes; while a sail, formed of mat, reached between a mast fixed in each. The cordage appeared to be composed of the bark covering of the cocoa-nut, and was exquisitely made.

At the violence of the surf forbade them to land at the island they now visited, the commodore returned to his former station at the inlet; and again set out his boats to find anchorage. A number of the Indians still remained assembled, were preparing some large canoes, probably to attack the boats; but a shot being fired over their heads, they instantly run away and concealed themselves.

themselves. In the evening the boats returned with a few cocoa-nuts, and next day they were sent off with all the invalids who were capable of moving. The commodore likewise landed, and saw many Indian huts, very meanly constructed. The men were quite naked, but some of the women wore a kind of cloth from the waist to the knees. The shore abounded with coral, and pearl oyster shells, whence it is probable that a valuable fishery might be established here.

In one of their perambulations, the seamen found in a hut the carved head of a rudder, which had evidently belonged to a Dutch long-boat; they also saw a piece of brass and iron, and some tools of the latter metal; but how they came here, no intelligence could be received.

The burial places of the natives were under shady trees, near their houses; and the graves were covered with flat stones, laid on perpendicular side-stones. On the branches, which shaded these repositories of the dead, were hung baskets of reeds, containing the heads and bones of turtle and other fish; and several boxes filled with human bones, were found near the graves.

Parrots and other beautiful birds were very numerous on this island: the doves were so tame, that they sometimes followed the English into the huts of the Indians. The flies were very troublesome; but no venomous reptiles were seen. The water was good, and almost the whole surface of the ground was covered with scurvy-grass. This island is situated in 14 deg. 29 min. south latitude, and 148 deg. 50 min. west longitude.

On the 12th of June they sailed to another island; and as they coasted along it, the natives observed their motions, The boats be

At the beach, the crew made signs that they were in want of water, on which the natives pointed farther along the shore. When they arrived at the spot, they saw a number of houses, and many Indians. As the boats were close in with the shore, and the ships at a small distance, a venerable old man, with a white beard, advanced to the beach with a young attendant. Having made a signal for the other Indians to retire, he came forward, pressing his beard to his breast with one hand, and extending the branch of a tree in the other.

In this attitude he began a kind of musical oration, during which the people in the boats threw some trifling presents, which he would not deign to touch, till he had finished his harangue. This being done, he threw the branch towards the boat's crew, and then picked up their presents.

Most of the natives having consented to lay down their arms, one of the midshipmen swam on shore, where he was soon surrounded by the Indians, who admired his dress, and seemed particularly pleased with his waistcoat. To gratify them, he made one of them a present of it; but another untying his cravat and running away with it, he thought it prudent to retreat. The natives soon followed him in an amicable manner, bringing each a cocoa-nut, or some water in a shell. This island is situated in 14 deg. 41 min. south latitude, and 149 deg. 15 min. west longitude; and both this and the last mentioned, the commodore named, out of respect to his sovereign, King George's Islands.

Next day they discovered another island, which was well peopled, and appeared beautifully verdant and fertile; but a violent surf beat on every
par

part of the coast. This they named the Prince of Wales's Island.

They now sailed to the northward, and from the daily flight of birds towards the south, at the approach of evening, and the islands they had visited being so populous, the commodore imagined there was a chain of them leading to a continent, which illusion it seems he would have searched for, had not the scurvy made such progress among the crews of both ships, as to render perseverance impossible.

On the 17th of June, our voyagers, being surrounded by flocks of birds, concluded that land was near; but they did not come in sight of it till the 21st, when at eight leagues distance it appeared like three islands connected with ridges of rocks. These islands were found to be populous and beautiful in the extreme; but the rocks and breakers that surrounded them, proved an insuperable bar to any attempt at landing.

On the 24th, they discovered an island which they named the Duke of York's. A terrible sea broke round the coast; but the place itself had a most alluring aspect. The boats landed with some difficulty, and brought off a large quantity of cocoa-nuts, which furnished great relief to the sick. Thousands of marine fowls were seen sitting on their nests, so tame that they were easily knocked down with sticks. This island has a large lake in its centre; but, notwithstanding its fertility, it appeared to be uninhabited.

A few days after, they sailed northwards, with a view of passing the equinoctial, and then proceeding to the Ladrões. On the 2d of July, they discovered a low flat island, abounding with cocoa-nut and other trees, and affording a agreeable

le prospect. A great number of the natives were seen on the beach ; and above sixty advanced and formed a circle round the ship, after they had leisurely surveyed, one Indian jumped out of his boat, swam to the ship, ran up its sides, and having gained the deck began laughing most violently. He then went out pilfering whatever he could lay his hands on ; but was prevented from carrying his booty.

Being dressed in a jacket and trowsers, and as many antic tricks as a monkey ; and swam off with the habit with which he was furnished. He devoured some biscuits with eagerness, and upon joining his comrades, others were induced, from the reception met with, to come on board, and shewed the disposition to theft, by seizing on some trifle with which they made off by their means in swimming.

The Indians were of a light copper complexion, and well made ; their hair was long and loosely and fancifully tied in knots or bunches. Their ears were bored, and had the appearance of being borne heavy weights. Their garments were shells round the neck, wrists, &c. : in other respects they were naked. A human tooth decorated the waist of one of the chiefs. Some of them had spears set with human teeth, as sharp as any weapon of steel. They were shewn some cocoa-nuts, by way of tempting them to supply the ships with this commodity ; they endeavoured to steal what was exhibited, but would not understand the sailors' meaning.

The place the officers gave the name of *Byron's Bay* in honour of the commodore. It is laid down

down in 1 deg. 18 min. south latitude, at deg. 56 min. east longitude.

Soon after they left this island, the crews to fall ill again with the scurvy, from which liberal use of cocoa-nuts had assisted to relieve them. The extreme heat of the weather occasioned fluxes, which added to their distress.

On the 28th of July, they came in sight of the island of Tinian, and Aguigan; and about noon the last day of that month, anchored at Tinian, the same station Anson had done before.

The commodore going on shore, saw many houses which had been erected by the Spaniards having pitched on a proper spot for tents, and proceeded with his attendants in search of beautiful lawns, of which the reader has had a tempting and luxuriant description in the voyage of Commodore Anson. With this view they worked their way through thick woods, for much trouble they were but indifferently compensated when they came to the place where the most charming scenes were supposed to lie. They found the lawns covered with high reeds, which were frequently entangled and cut their legs like cords. They were pestered with flies, which stung down their throats, whenever they opened their mouths.

Having killed a bull, the only achievement of this fruitless expedition, they returned much dissatisfied to the tents, which had been set up during their absence. The invalids were brought on shore, and the well was cleared; but the water, which is described as excellent in Anson's voyage, *was found brackish* and full of worms.

are we to reconcile the discordant de-
mons of voyagers! The terrestrial paradise of
, is a rude and disagreeable spot according
on. It may, however, be observed, that
Anson arrived here, the very possession of
was like the gift of life; and as it appeared
time to have been much more plentifully
d with cattle, the grafs must in consequence
een better kept down, and the lawns not
nonentity.

ile the vessels lay here, they were forced out
, to avoid being dashed on the rocks; but
recovered their stations. The commodore
ill of the scurvy, was confined to his tent;
ough the crew in general recovered from
isorder, many of them fell sick of fevers,
o died, the first since they had left Eng-

rains were continual and violent, and the
xcessive, the thermometer generally stand-
thirty-six. The flies and other insects tor-
d them by day, and the mosquitoes by

Scorpions, centipedes, and black ants
ed; and, in fine, the advantages of the situ-
were overbalanced by its inconveniences.

was difficult to kill any cattle, and when
succeeded, the meat was generally flyblown,
ank before they could bring it to the ship.
hogs, however, were numerous, and formed
principal supply of fresh provisions. These
res they found out a method of ensnaring,
ich means they had them alive.

try was indeed sufficiently plentiful, but
became tainted and full of maggots. At
hey discovered a spot where cattle was

V.

F

more

more abundant, and by degrees they became better reconciled to the place.

Saypan is described as larger and more pleasant than Tinian. It is generally covered with trees, and abounds with guanicoes. It appeared from the number of pearl oyster shells, that the Spaniards had a fishery here.

The sick being pretty well recovered, the commodore sailed from Tinian on the 30th of September, steering northward. On the 18th of next month, several land birds, apparently exhausted, flew near the ships; and one of them, as large as a goose, rested on the bows. Its beak and legs were black; the rest of the body wholly white.

They anchored off Timoan on the 5th of November, where the commodore landed. The inhabitants proved to be Malays; many of whom, when the boat approached the shore, came down to the beach, armed with spears, long knives, and daggers. However, the boat's crew landed, and exchanged a few handkerchiefs for some fowls, a kid, and a goat.

These people were of small stature, and copper complexioned. On their hands they wore turbans, and had clothes fastened with silver clasps round their waists. One old man was habited in the Persian style. Their houses are composed of split bamboo, and are raised about eight feet from the ground. Cocoa and cabbage trees abound. An animal was brought on board alive while they lay at anchor here, with legs like a deer, and body resembling a hare, which proved excellent eating.

They next anchored in the harbour of Toupou, where nothing occurred worth

mark for some days. On the 14th, a sloop put in to the same port, and immediately hoisting Dutch colours, the commodore sent an officer on board her, who was received with much politeness and presented with tea; but as the crew was chiefly Malays, they could not understand each other. This vessel was made of split bamboo; and a piece of timber fixed on each quarter, supplied the place of a rudder.

Mr. Byron sailed the following day, and held on his course till the 19th, when he fell in with an English snow, bound from Bencoolen for Malacca and Bengal. By this time their biscuit was rotten and filled with worms, and the beef and pork were putrid. The master of the snow being apprized of this misfortune, sent the commodore two gallons of arrack, a turtle, twelve fowls, and a sheep, which it is conjectured was half his stock, and he generously refused to accept the smallest return.

Same day they dropped anchor in the road of Sumatra, and on the 27th reached Batavia. Having anchored near the town, they fired a salute of eleven guns, which was returned; and an English ship from Bombay fired thirteen guns in honour of the commodore.

The Dutch commodore sent his boat on board the *Dolphin*, under the command of his cockswain, who made but an indifferent appearance. He put several questions to Mr. Byron respecting his voyage and destination, which he began to minute down; but the commodore considering this as an indignity, desired him instantly to leave the ship, and thus the visit ended.

However, when Mr. Byron visited the Dutch commodore at his country house, he was rece-

ed with great politeness, and told that he n
take a house in any part of the city, or be ac
modated at the hotel. It should be obse
that any inhabitant of Batavia permittin
stranger to sleep, though but a single night i
house, incurs a penalty of five hundred dol
for the hotel being a regularly licensed loc
house, and bringing in a considerable rev
it is peculiarly protected. The master at
time was a Frenchman. The hotel is the
superb building in the city, having more tl
of a palace than an inn for the receptio
guests.

The streets of Batavia are regularly 'dis
and cooled by canals, lined with trees. Th
habitants are a motley group of Dutch, F
guese, Chinese, Persians, Moors, Malays,
nese, and others. Their aggregate numb
astonishingly great. The Chinese live in a
rate town without the city walls, and are
traffickers, having annually ten or twelve tho
vessels of various descriptions, laden from C

The roads for several miles round the cit
very wide, and are bounded by a canal fl
with trees. Adjoining to the canals are
country houses and gardens, many of whic
splendid and extensive.

On the 10th of December, the commodor
Batavia with the usual compliments; and d
their run to Prince's Island, they were so
dantly supplied with turtle by boats from th
va shore, that the common sailors subsisted
ly on that fish.

After a few days stay at Prince's Island,
directed their course for the Cape of Good

the governor sent his coach and six for the com-
e, and entertained him with great polite-
naking him a tender of the accommodation
company's house in the Physic Garden, and
e of his own carriage.

on, in conformity to the general voice of voy-
represents the Cape as a fine country, situ-
n a healthy climate, and abounding in all
of refreshments. The commodore frequent-
ulged his men with permission to land, and
s regularly returned intoxicated with Cape

the 7th of March they left this delightful
and on the 25th, crossed the equinoctial
About this time an accident happening to
dder of the Tamar, which it was impossible
air at sea, the captain was ordered to bear
for Antigua, in consequence of which they
company on the 1st of April.

Dolphin now proceeded to England with-
y memorable incident, and anchored in the
; on the 9th of May 1766; having circum-
ted the terraqueous globe in about a year
n months.

ugh this voyage was not pregnant with
original discoveries, it served to ascertain
fition of former ones, with some new addi-
and by encouraging the hope of meeting
omething more important to reward adven-
t may be considered as the prelude and the
as to the succeeding attempts at discovery,
we apprehend have left nothing more to
shed for, unless like Alexander, we figh
w worlds to pervade.

1

2

3

VOYAGE OF
CAPTAIN WALLIS,
ROUND THE GLOBE.

uation of the scheme of discovery, the ship, the Dolphin, was fitted out round the world, and the command was given to Captain Samuel Wallis, who fell down the Thames on the 26th of July 1766, and, on the 1st of August, anchored off Plymouth. Three days afterwards, he received orders from the Admiralty with directions to take the Prince of Wales and the Swallow under his command. On the 22d, they sailed, and on the 1st of September anchored in the road of

Angora in some sea-stores, they proceeded on their voyage, and on the 16th were off the Cape of Good Hope, where such a perfect calm took place that the vessel remained motionless. A breeze came up again, wafted them along, and they found themselves surrounded by a number of small boats. The Swallow being a bad sailor, she was obliged to anchor the night of the 21st, but after a few days, rejoined near the Isle of

On the 1st of October, they anchored in Port Praya, they obtained from the commanding officer to procure provisions and other necessaries. The small pox was raging

raging at this place, such of the crews as had undergone that afflictive malady, were strictly joined not to land; and though this was the season, by a liberal attention to the health of the men, they in general escaped any particular ailments.

Having taken in their intended supplies, set sail on the 28th, and same night saw the rising mountain of Terra del Fuego. Captain Wallis now ordered every man to be furnished with fishing tackle, in order that he might supply himself with that kind of food; and to prevent infection, he forbade that any fish should be more than twenty-four hours. The butter and cheese being expended, the people began to be served with oil, and at intervals with mustard and vinegar. In a word, proper precautions were early taken to prevent the inroads of disease, which conduct is always much safer than to wait for a cure, however efficacious; but with their care, sickness was not to be evaded.

The Prince Frederic having sprung a leak at the same time that her crew was very sick, Lieutenant Brine, who commanded her, expressed his apprehensions, that without assistance she should not be long able to keep company. Attempts were in consequence made to repair the vessel; but as it was not in the commander's power to grant her every requisite support, the Dolphin and Swallow completed their provisions from her, and she was left.

Arriving in 30 deg. south latitude on the 1st of November, which was the summer season in those climates, the men found the weather cold, that they were obliged to fence against the incursions of their apparel. On the

meteor was observed, which flew from east to the south-west, leaving such a light as equalled the brightness of noon—some days after, they fell in with whales, birds, which assured them of the vicinity.

16th of December, being near Cape Sydney saw several persons on horse-back, signs it was understood that their arrival would be welcome. As the vessels came on board, the natives shouted aloud, and kept up a fire all night, opposite the ship. In the morning the captain went on shore, and having ordered the Indians to sit down, he distributed to them, combs, buttons, knives, and various other trifles, and gratified the females by some bits of tobacco.

He next endeavoured to explain his business, and took some pains to make them understand that he would exchange bill hooks and other articles which he shewed them, for guanicoe skins; but they either could not, or would not understand him.

According to the most exact account, the tallest of the people measured six feet seven inches; others were an inch or two shorter; several they appeared of a gigantic stature compared to the English. They were muscular and well made; but their hands and feet were not so small in proportion to their size*. They were dressed in the skins of guanicoes, the hairy sides turned inwards; and some wore a piece of cloth, wove from the hair of the animal, depending from the neck to the knees. They wore a kind of buskin, reaching

see *Nodore Byron's Voyage* for a description of the

from

from the middle of the leg to the instep, and passing under the heel. Their hair, which was very long and coarse, was tied back with a piece of cotton. Both men and women rode astride, on horses about fourteen hands high. Some of the horsemen had wooden spurs. Several had their arms painted; while the faces of others were variously marked; and some were observed with a painted circle round their eyes.

Two round stones, inclosed in leather, formed their weapons, one of which they held in their hand, while the other being violently swung round the head, as discharged from a string eight feet long, with the same force as from a sling. By this cord they also caught guanicoes and ostriches, throwing it in such a manner as to hamper the legs of their prey.

These people seemed much addicted to talking; but appeared to have no idea of any of the European languages; though it was remarked that they shewed a facility in pronouncing English words, particularly "Englishmen come on shore," which they had been taught to repeat like parrots.

As they appeared desirous of going on board, the captain took eight of them into the boats, on which they began singing for joy; but when they reached the ship, they expressed no surprise at the novelties they beheld, till their eyes caught a looking-glass, before which they practised many ridiculous forms and antic gestures. They refused to drink any liquor but water, though they ate freely of whatever was presented to them. They seemed highly pleased with the live on board; and one of them making signs,

A pair of shoes and buckles, and presented
of the rest with a little bag, in which were
one new sixpence and halfpence, with a ribbon
passed through them, to suspend from their necks.

On the marines being exercised before them,
they were terrified at the fire of the muskets, and
one of them falling down, shut his eyes and lay
without motion, as if he was sensible of the de-
structive nature of these weapons. However they
were so well pleased with their general reception,
that they were with difficulty prevailed on to go
on shore; and when they found that they must sub-
mit, one of the party chaunted a kind of prayer
of some length, and petitioned to stay till even-
ing, by pointing to the sun, and then moving his
hand round to the westward. As soon as they
got into the boat, they resumed their songs; and
when it landed, many more of the natives pressed
to be taken on board, and seemed much dissatis-
fied that they could not receive this envied dis-
tinction.

Same day they entered the Straights of Magel-
lan with a favouring tide, and saw many persons
on horseback, hunting the guanicoes, which ran
with prodigious swiftness. The natives having
lighted fires opposite the ships, about four hun-
dred of them were observed in a valley, with their
horses feeding near them. On this spot Mr. By-
ron had seen the Patagonians. Some of the offi-
cers were sent towards the shore, to reconnoitre,
with orders not to land, as they could receive no
assistance from the ships, in case of need. As they
approached the beach, however, many of the na-
tives fled towards them, among whom were
some of their former visitors, who vociferated
"Englishmen come on shore," and could scarcely be
kept

kept from getting on board, when it was found they would not land. Some bread, tobacco, and toys were distributed among them, but they made no return in the provisions of their country.

The tide and currents were so violent on the 23d of December, as to drive the ships in different directions; but in the evening they were brought to an anchor. On Christmas day a supply of celery was procured from Elizabeth Island, which being boiled up with portable soup and wheat, made a salutary and hearty breakfast.

On the 26th they anchored in Port Famine, and a tent being erected for their reception, the sick were sent on shore. The sail-makers had likewise a tent pitched for them; and wooding and watering parties were engaged in their respective vocations. Many of the crew were at this time ill of the scurvy, who speedily recovered by the plentiful use of vegetables and frequent sea-bathing.

The ships were now repaired with much assiduity and attention, and thousands of young trees were carefully taken up with the moul round their roots, to be transplanted in Falkland Islands. The master of the Dolphin, who has been previously dispatched in search of anchoring places, returned on the 17th of January, after being successful; and the ships soon came to an anchor, half a mile from the shore, near a current of fresh water, that rushed with impetuosity from the mountains.

However, a more convenient station having been discovered, they sailed next day for the of Cape Gallant. Here they caught wild du abundance. The master of the Swallow a

at of the South Seas; but being disappointed in his expectations, he erected a pyramid on the spot, and left some memorials of the date and page.

The country here has a most forbidding aspect. The lower parts of the vast mountains, on each side the Straights, are clothed with trees; higher are fragments of broken rocks and heaps of snow; while the tops are wholly naked and desolate. On the 28th, they saw a great smoke in two different places; and next morning, some people being sent ashore for water, several of the natives came off in three canoes, making signs of friendship, which being answered to their wish, they shouted aloud.

The Indians came up eating raw seal's flesh; and the skins with which they were covered stunk most intolerably. They were armed with bows, arrows, and javelins; the two last of which were pointed with flint. The tallest of these people did not exceed the common European standard; their complexion was a deep copper colour.

Three of the natives, who were taken on board the Dolphin, ate of whatever was given them; but, like the Patagonians, they rejected any fluid or water. They seemed likewise highly entertained on seeing themselves in a looking-glass, gazed at the novelty of its effects, and having contemplated themselves for a short space, burst into the most immoderate fits of laughter. The captain attending them on shore, distributed some blankets among their wives and children, and was in return complimented with some of their *nour, and pieces of mundic, of the same quality as that found in the Cornish mines.*

On the 3d of February, the ships sailed, and same day anchored in York Road. Next morning Captain Wallis with a party went on shore, near Bachelor's River, where he saw some Indian huts, and several dogs, that fled on being discovered. Near this river is a cataraet, the noise of which is tremendous. The water falls upwards of four hundred feet, partly over a steep descent, and partly in a perpendicular line. On the 14th they attempted to sail, but losing ground, they were driven with such violence by the current, as to be in the instant danger of being dashed against the rocks, from which they were frequently not more than half the ship's length distant.

Escaping this danger, they cast anchor in Butler's Bay, so called from one of the mates, by whom it was discovered. This station they retained till the 20th, when they encountered a most violent storm, which increased till the evening, the sea breaking over them in the most dreadful manner; but as their cables held good, they were providentially preserved. Here they remained eight days repairing the damage they had sustained. Meanwhile they caught abundance of fish, and procured plenty of vegetables. The mountains in this neighbourhood had the most desolate and rugged appearance. Their summits seemed to be lost in the clouds; and some of them, on the southern shore, produced not a blade of grass, while the vallies, equally sterile, were sunk in snow.

On the 1st of March they took a station in Lion's Cove; and for the five days succeeding their departure from thence, they had the most tempestuous weather, which menaced immediate destruction. The Dolphin's people were so pre-
 pared.

felled with an opinion that their consort could not ride out the storm, as to fancy they saw some of her hands endeavouring to save themselves on the rocks.

During a fortnight they were at a reduced allowance, except of brandy, which was found salutary. After a series of difficulties, in which the Swallow was nearly lost, both vessels anchored on the 15th in Swallow Harbour.

When they set sail again, the waves ran so high, and the fog was so thick, that they narrowly escaped shipwreck among a cluster of small islands. The weather, however, clearing up, they reached Cape Upright Bay. Soon after two canoes came along-side the Dolphin, with a great quantity of seal's flesh, blubber, and penguins, which the Indians feasted on raw. A sailor having caught a fish about the size of a herring, gave it to one of them, who killed it by a bite near the gill's, and instantly devoured it.

With regard to liquors, they were equally abstemious as the other natives of the coast; but readily devoured every kind of food that was offered them. Though the weather was piercing, they had no other covering than a seal's skin. They all appeared blear-eyed, probably arising from the smoke of their fires, and their filthy way of life. They killed their fish by striking them with a javelin pointed with bone. Having received a few baubles from the captain, they departed well pleased.

One night, a party of the sailors staying on shore, a body of the Indians hurried to their boats, and began to make free with their contents. The sailors arrived in time to prevent their depredations, which enraged them so much, that they

they betook themselves to their arms; but were soon pacified, by the judicious application of some trifling presents.

While they lay here, some of the Indians fed them several of the birds called race horses; and soon after a party of them brought six of the children on board, to whom the captain made presents of necklaces and bracelets. They appeared remarkably tender to their offspring, and attentively delicate to their women. A boat crew having been ordered on shore, to procure wood and water, some of the natives followed them in their canoes with the utmost expedition as if apprehensive that they meant to make it with their women, who appeared among the rocks; but the English endeavoured to convince them that their jealousy was wrong, by lying till the Indians got a head, yet they could not be satisfied; but immediately joined their families and retired.

Fluxes beginning to be very frequent among the crews, the surgeon ordered them to abstain wholly from muscles, with which they had hitherto been plentifully supplied.

On the 10th of April both ships proceeded in company; but next day they had the misfortune to lose sight of each other; nor did Captain Carteret, in the *Swallow*, rejoin her consort during the remainder of the voyage; in consequence of which, the proceedings and discoveries of the respective commanders must be separately detailed.

The day the ships parted, the *Dolphin* cleared the Straights, after having encountered innumerable difficulties and dangers, for the space of thirteen months and twenty-five days,

* See the subsequent voyage.

nong other observations, not generally interesting, Captain Wallis takes notice of the Spanish built with a view of commanding the Manic Straights. It was situated near Port Famine, a very appropriate name, after the miserable fate of the settlers, who were ultimately expelled out. The bays and harbours, in this celebrated passage, are generally convenient enough; with in the sea, and vegetables on the shore are plentiful; but such is the strength of the currents, the frequent recurrence of storms, that this navigation must ever be attended with difficulty and delay.

Following a westward course, they saw a number of different kinds of birds, flying about the ship. After a long-continued exposure to wet, the men now began to be attacked with fevers and agues; and, therefore, when the weather was favourable, the sick were brought on deck; and at other times were nourished with salop and port-soup. The violent winds, however, attended with rain, soon recommenced; and the ship being in danger of losing her masts, it was thought necessary to alter their course.

Some time elapsed without any material occurrence. On the 14th of May, something like a land appeared, and a number of birds were seen; but steering for the quarter where they expected to fall in with it, they were disappointed; though the signs were sometimes renewed. At length on the 16th of June, they came in sight of a small island, which diffused joy over the whole company.

When they arrived within a moderate distance of this island, another was discovered. To the west of these islands, a boat, properly manned,

was dispatched, and on their approaching the shore, two canoes were seen to put off from the adjoining island. The crews, however, landed, and after collecting some cocoa-nuts and scurvy-grass, in which nature has been so bountiful in climates where this vegetable is so much wanted, they returned to the ships. In this excursion they saw three huts, supported on posts, and covered with cocoa and palm leaves, ingeniously interwoven.

As this island was, in every part, encompassed with rocks and breakers, the captain resolved to try the other, after giving this first discovery the name of Whitsun Island. On approaching the adjacent isle, about fifty of the natives, armed with pikes, and some with firebrands in their hands, were observed running down to the coast. Two boats were, therefore, armed and sent out with instructions to avoid hostilities, and to try to cultivate a good understanding with the Indians.

As the boats drew near, the natives assumed a posture of defence, but the crew making signs of friendship, and displaying some trinkets, a few of the Indians walked into the water, to meet them. The English now signified that cocoa-nuts and water would be acceptable, which being understood, they immediately fetched a small quantity of each, for which they received nails and other trifles. While this exchange went on, one of them stole a silk handkerchief, with its contents but the thief eluded detection.

Next morning the boats were again dispatched with orders to land, if it could be done without provoking hostilities. As they approached the shore, they observed seven large canoes ready for sailing, in which the Indians, after making signs to the English to advance, embarked, and sailed.

d. Some of these canoes were thirty feet
 our broad, and three deep. The people
 g, black, flowing hair; were of a dark
 tion, and a middle size; and were dressed
 ing fastened round the waist. The men
 fly proportioned, and the women appear-
 tiful.

Lieutenant being again sent on shore, was
 to take possession of the place under the
 of Queen Charlotte's Island. The boats
 d, laden with cocoas and scurvy-grass, and
 l that they had discovered excellent wa-
 party of twenty men, headed by one of
 tes, was now sent on shore to fill water;
 sick were landed for the benefit of the
 ile a number of hands were employed in
 ng cocoa-nuts, and other vegetable re-
 nts. The water was safely brought off,
 greatest part of the vegetables were lost,
 rolling of the waves, which almost filled
 ter that conveyed them.

next made an island where they found
 tools, bearing some resemblance to the
 n mechanic instruments of Europe, which
 rmed of shells and stones. Here they re-
 that the dead remained unburied, under a
 canopy, to decay by natural degrees. To
 y gave the appellation of Egmont Island,
 k possession of it with the usual formalities.
 n 19 deg. 20 min. south latitude, and 138
 min. west longitude, not far distant from
 ft discoveries.

eeding on their course, they observed some
natives on an island, to which they gave
of Gloucester Island; but as it was en-
with rocks and breakers, they did not
 ter

tempt to land. Same day they discovered Cumberland Island, and on the succeeding, a third, which received the name of Prince William Henry's Island.

On the 17th, they again came in sight of land, and a light seen at night convinced them it was inhabited. It appeared rich in cocoa-trees, a certain proof that it was not deficient in water. An officer being sent on shore, to open a traffic with the natives, saw many of them, but could find no convenient anchorage.

Some of these Indians, distinguished by carrying white sticks in their hands, appeared to exercise an authority over the rest. While the lieutenant was trafficking with them, an Indian, diving into the water, seized the grappling of the boat, while his companions on shore laid hold of the rope by which she was fastened, and endeavoured to draw her into the surf; but the firing of a musket disconcerted them so much, that they abandoned their design. From the number of people seen, and the largeness of the canoes on shore, it was conjectured that some larger islands lay at no great distance. Having named this Onaburgh Island, they again set sail.

Early next morning they saw land, but being enveloped in a fog, they cast anchor, and no sooner had it cleared away, than they found themselves surrounded by a number of canoes, in which were many hundreds of people. These approached the ship with marked admiration, and talked with great earnestness. Some baubles being shewn them, they held a general consultation, at the end of which they rowed round the ship with an appearance of friendship; and one of them delivered an oration, at the conclusion of which

be

he threw into the sea a branch of a plantain tree, which he held in his hand during the ceremony. This being done, a young Indian assumed resolution to come on board. He declined the acceptance of any presents till his countrymen came up in their canoes; when, after having held a conference, and thrown some palm branches on board, others ventured into the ship.

No sooner had this motley group got on deck, than a goat, disliking their appearance, butted against the back of one of them with his horns, on which the Indian, turning round, and seeing the animal ready to renew the attack, plunged into the sea, and was instantly followed by his countrymen. Their terror, however, soon subsiding, they returned; and being shewn the sheep, hogs and poultry, they intimated that they were acquainted with the two latter kind of animals.

The captain, availing himself of this information, distributed some nails and other trifles among them, at the same time making signs that he was in want of hogs, fowls, and fruit; but they could not be made to comprehend him. These people were detected in several attempts to commit theft; and at last one of them found means to jump overboard with one of the officer's laced hats, with which he escaped.

The interior parts of this island abound in hills, clothed with forest trees, and above them are high peaks, the sources of several large rivers. The houses, at a distance, had the appearance of barns. Towards the sea, the land is level, and produces the cocoa-nut, with a variety of fruits. The whole face of the country is picturesque beyond description.

Have

Having proceeded some way along the shore, the ship brought to, and the boats being sent to found a bay that promised good anchorage, the Indians flocked round them in their canoes. The captain, apprehensive that they meditated hostilities, made a signal for the boat to return, and fired a gun over them; but though they were alarmed at the first report, they soon recovered themselves, and made an attempt to cut off the cutter; but she escaped by dint of sailing. Some canoes, on a different station, observing this, plied up, and wounded some of the boat's crew with stones. A musket was now fired, which wounded one of the aggressors in the shoulder, and frightened the rest into a precipitate retreat.

The ship was now preparing to sail, when a large canoe making towards her at a great rate, it was determined to wait the event of her arrival. No sooner was she come up, than an Indian making an oration, threw a plantain branch on board, when the captain immediately returned the compliment of peace, and distributed some toys among the crew, with which they retired well satisfied.

Next morning they found themselves off a peak of land, almost covered with the natives and their houses. On the 21st, the ship anchored, and several canoes appeared with fruit, fowls, and hogs, for which they found a ready market, and an equivalent to their satisfaction.

The boats having been sent to found along the coast, were followed by several large double canoes, three of which ran at the cutter, and staved in her quarter; while the Indians, armed with clubs, endeavoured to board her. It was now necessary to shew the superiority of the European weapons.

ons: they fired and killed one of the natives, dangerously wounded another.

The boats were now suffered to keep on their way, while some of the canoes landed, and others returned to the ship to renew their merchandize. The boat's crews being engaged in soundings, were much importuned to land, particularly by the women, who gave them the most indelicate

Thousands of men, women, and children, were time lined the shore.

The canoes still kept attending on the ship; the people appearing so numerous and so art-

was thought unsafe to permit any of them to come on board. Next day the natives brought more hogs, poultry, and fruit, which they bartered for knives and other articles. At the same time the boats having been sent out to water, a lure was thrown out to tempt them to land; when this was found ineffectual to draw them from their duty, the women, in particular, pelted the sailors with apples and bananas, and shewed every mark of contempt and detestation.

The following day, as they were preparing to depart, and the ship had almost reached the spot, suddenly struck, and her head remained immovable on a coral rock. In this dangerous situation she continued nearly an hour, when a boat springing up from the shore, fortunately disengaged her off. During this period of danger, the ship was surrounded by an immense concourse of natives, but not one of them attempted to come on board.

The ship at last being safely moored, the canoes from the shore renewed their intercourse, bringing the usual supplies, which they exchanged for iron and cutlery; but as they appeared to
be

have a considerable force, the captain deemed necessary to load and prime his guns, and other defensive measures.

On the evening of the 24th, some large canoes came off with stores, and at the same time a number of women displayed the same libidinous dances as before. During this singular exhibition the large canoes kept plying round the ship, some of the natives played on a kind of drums, others sung, and the rest blew their conch shells. Immediately one of the canoes advanced, on the prow of which sat one of the Indians, with a yellow and red feathers in his hands. Thence he presented to the captain, and when the ship was preparing for him, he put off the prow, and threw the branch of a cocoa-tree into the air.

This, it appeared, was the signal for a general shout was heard, canoes advancing in every direction, discharging a volley of stones against the English. On the ship, guns, loaded with small shot, were fired, musketry was directed among the thickest of the enemy, who surrounded the ship to the number of two thousand. The firearms seemed to disconcert them; but quickly recovering their spirits, they renewed the attack.

Thousands of the natives on shore were seen hastening to the support of their men; on which the cannon were pointed to the place of embarkation, and a temporary fortification was perceptible among the assailants. They again rallied, and having hoisted their flag, boldly advanced to the ship, and threw stones of full two pounds weight, which wounded many of the

while, some canoes coming under the bow, from which no shot had hitherto been discharged, a gun was levelled at one of them, which carried a person who appeared to have some authority; and his vessel being split into two parts, the contest was immediately at an end. The canoes retreated with great precipitation, and the people on shore hid themselves behind the hills, as if sensible of the dreadful effects of the artillery. .

The captain now moored his ship within a little distance of a fine river, in a station that had been selected. . Next morning a reconnoitring party returned with the news of excellent water, and that not a canoe was to be seen. Soon after a lieutenant was sent on shore, with all the boats well armed and manned, who took possession of the island under the name of King George III's Island*, with the customary solemnities. This being done, the king's health was drank in rum, mixed with the river water, by every person present.

While the English were engaged in the performance of this ceremony, two old men were seen on the opposite side of the river, who put themselves in a supplicating posture, under the evident impression of fear. On this the English made signs to them to cross the river; in consequence of which one swam over, and crawled up to the lieutenant on his hands and knees. The officer, by signs, endeavoured to convince him that no injury should be done to the Indians, unless they were the aggressors. He then shewed

* This island, now better known by the appellation of Otaheite, is one of the most charming spots in the world, and has been the scene of many transactions among subsequent navigators, which we shall have occasion to mention.

some hatchets, which he intimated would be readily exchanged for provisions.

Some trifling presents having been made the old man, he expressed his gratitude by very significant gestures, and danced round the flag-staff in extasy; but when he saw the pendant shaken by the wind, he shrunk back with signs of fear and surprise. Recovering himself, he returned with several others, bringing two hogs, which they laid down and then began dancing as before. The old Indian afterwards rowed towards the ship with two hogs, and when he was come along-side her, he delivered a grave oration, and distributed a number of plantain leaves, one at a time*; after which he rowed back, declining at that time the acceptance of any present.

The noise of drums and other instruments was heard the following night, and in the morning the pendant was missing, and the natives had retired from the coast. The old Indian, however, came up again to a watering party, and made them a present of some fowls and fruits. At this time the captain was confined by indisposition; but with the help of glasses he watched what was doing on shore. In the course of his observations, he perceived numbers of the natives secretly drawn towards the watering place, while two divisions of the canoes were advancing from opposite points.

As the lieutenant too had observed the threatened danger, he got his men into the boats; previous to which he had dispatched the Indian N

* This ceremony appears to have borne some resemblance to that of the North Americans, who close their periods with the delivery of a belt of wampum.

tor to intimate to his countrymen, that the crew wanted nothing but water, and to desire they would keep at a distance while it was filling. His persuasion, however, seemed to have no effect, for no sooner had the English left the casks, than the Indians seized them, while all the canoes were in motion, and the hills lined with women and children.

The canoes having taken in a supply of stones, boldly advanced to the ship; but Captain Wallis, irritated at their behaviour, and determined to put an end to such petty, though troublesome hostilities, ordered the guns to be fired on the first party that approached in the canoes, and at the same time some to be pointed to the woods and hills where the islanders were assembled. The natives being now convinced both of the near and distant effects of the strangers' weapons, fled in all directions, astonished and confounded.

The boats were now sent off again with a strong guard, and orders were given to destroy all the canoes within their reach. Soon after a small party of the natives ventured down to the beach, and having stuck up some branches of trees, again retired to the woods. In a short space they returned again, bringing with them some hogs and dogs, with their legs tied, and parcels of cloth, which they left with signs for the sailors to take away. On this a boat was dispatched to take up the hogs, and in lieu of them deposited some hatchets and nails; but the Indians would not meddle with them till the cloth also was removed.

On the 27th, the old Indian again made his appearance, and after a formal oration, approached the commanding officer on shore, who, shewing *the stones that had been thrown by the natives*

endeavoured to make him understand that the English had acted only on the defensive in the late action. The old man, however, with great openness, intimated his opinion that his countrymen had been aggrieved. At last, however, he suffered himself to be reconciled, shook hands with the lieutenant, and condescended to accept some presents. It was then hinted that it would be prudent for the islanders to appear only in small parties for the future, with which terms the sage being satisfied, a traffic, mutually advantageous, was soon re-established between them.

Matters thus accommodated, the sick were sent on shore under the care of the surgeon. This gentleman having shot a wild duck, the bird dropped on the opposite side of the river, in the presence of several Indians, who immediately fled; but soon stopping, one of them was prevailed on to bring the duck over, which he laid at the surgeon's feet, with the most visible agitation of mind. A second shot killed three ducks; and the natives were by this time possessed with such an idea of the powers of firearms, that while it raised their astonishment, served to ensure their good behaviour.

To cut off all occasion for disputes and pilfering, the gunner was appointed to manage the traffic with the Indians, and the good effects of this regulation were soon perceptible. The natives, indeed, sometimes found means to carry off various articles, but the sight of a gun was generally sufficient to obtain restitution. Besides, *the old Indian rendered himself extremely serviceable, in checking the depredations of his countrymen, or in recovering what was lost.* An Indian, one day, having stolen a hatchet, the offender

was taken and delivered up to the gunner; but though he had been guilty of other thefts, the captain, after keeping him in suspense, discharged him unpunished, which lenity seemed highly grateful to his countrymen. Nor was the offender himself wanting in gratitude, for next day he brought a roasted hog and some bread-fruit as a present to the gunner.

Several of the principal officers being at this time much indisposed, the command devolved on the second lieutenant, who discharged his duty with zeal and fidelity; and by the friendly intercourse established with the natives, they had now such copious supplies of vegetables and fresh pork, that, in a fortnight, almost every man was restored to perfect health.

After various unimportant transactions, on the 3d of July, the ship's bottom was examined, when it was found to be in the best condition possible, considering the length of the voyage. This day they caught a shark, which proved an acceptable present to the natives.

The old Indian, who had been absent some days on a progress into the interior, in quest of provisions, returned on the 5th, and brought with him a roasted hog, as a present for the captain, who remunerated him with a looking glass, and some other articles. His return was soon followed by some of the natives, who had never visited the market before; and of them, hogs, of a superior quality to any hitherto seen, were readily purchased.

The common sailors being now very intimate with the natives, and finding such favours as they wanted, were most readily granted for naught, and became tempted to make free with those of

ship, to gratify their dulcineas. Nor was this in consequence of the licentious manner which they indulged, they became so impotent of controul, that it was found necessary to the articles of war, to awe them into obedience.

The captain's health being now restored, he went in his boat to survey the island, which he found every where delightful, and extremely fertile. On the 8th, they were visited by soldiers of a superior rank to any they had hitherto seen, before whom the captain having placed gold, silver, and copper coins, and two large pieces of iron, intimating that they might take their choice, they eagerly seized the nails and a few new pence; but left the other articles untouched.

Indeed, so much attached were these people to their nails, that they now refused to supply them for any other medium of exchange. The captain therefore ordered the ship to be sent on shore, when it was found that almost all the hammer nails were stolen, besides great numbers that had been drawn from different places; on which every man was ordered before the commander was informed, that no person should be suffered to go on shore, till the thieves were discovered.

His threats, however, proved ineffectual at that time.

In a few days the gunner conducted on board a lady of agreeable features and portly figure, whose age seemed to be upwards of forty. This lady, who had only recently arrived in that part of the island, having been observed to possess great authority, was presented by the gunner with some toys; on which she invited him to her house, where he was hospitably entertained. While visiting the Dolphin, her whole behaviour was marked by her rank and understanding. She was





ed by the captain with a looking glass, some trinkets, and a handsome blue mantle, which he tied round her with ribbons.

On intimating her with that the captain would visit her on shore, he consented; and accordingly set out next day, when she met him on the beach with a numerous retinue, some of whom she directed to carry Captain Wallis, who was ill, across the river, and from thence to her habitation. As they approached this, many persons of both sexes advanced to meet her, to whom she presented the captain, and they all kissed his hand.

The palace of the queen, as she appeared to be, was three hundred and twenty feet long, and forty broad. The roof was covered with palm leaves, and supported on three rows of pillars. The captain, lieutenant, and purser being seated, the queen assisted some of her female attendants to pull off the gentlemen's coats, shoes, and stockings, a service which they very awkwardly performed. The surgeon being heated with walking, having pulled off his wig, one of the Indians screamed out, and the eyes of the whole company were instantly fixed on a sight as unusual as surprising to them.

The queen now ordered some bales of cloth to be introduced, which were destined for the dress of the captain and his attendants. On taking leave, the captain walked arm in arm with her, and when they came to any wet or dirty place, she took him in her arms like a child, and lifted him over. When she had attended him to the beach, she made him a present of a sow big with young, and returned to her palace.

Next day the gunner, being sent to wait upon Oberea, for that was the name of the queen, found her busied in entertaining some hundreds of Indians, who were seated round her. The gunner having presented some bill-hooks, hatchets, and other articles to her majesty in the captain's name, was entertained with a mess, which he supposed consisted of fowls and apples, cut small and mixed with salt water, which were found very palatable *. The queen herself was seated somewhat above the rest of the company, and served by two female attendants.

She received the captain's presents with an air of great satisfaction, and the supply of provision was now greater than ever; but the prices were raised which arose, chiefly from the promiscuous intercourse between the sailors and the natives on which account some restrictions were imposed on them.

Soon after this, the gunner being on shore, discovered a woman on the opposite bank of the river weeping in the most piteous manner. Perceiving that she was noticed, she sent a youth over to him, who having made a long oration, laid a branch of plantain at his feet, after which he returned to fetch the woman, and also brought two hogs with him. The youth again addressed the gunner, who in the end understood that the husband and three sons of this poor woman had been killed in the skirmish between the natives and the English. After she had told her tale of woe, she fell speechless on the ground.

* It is strange that none of our epicures have tried composition. With sauce a little more *piquant* than *salter*, it might serve for a lent dish at least.

The gunner endeavoured to console her, and at last she became a little calmer, but would not accept any thing in return for her present of hogs.

A party, who had traversed the coasts of the island, returned with an ample supply of provisions. They saw no quadrupeds, save dogs and hogs; and reported, that the natives ate all their meat either roasted or baked, as they had no vessels in which it could be boiled; nor did they seem to entertain any idea that it could be heated by fire, so as to answer any useful purpose. One morning, as the queen was at breakfast, an Indian who attended her, observing the English turn the cock of an urn, he imitated the action, when some of the scalding water falling on his hand, he jumped about the cabin in pain and surprise, to the visible terror of his companions.

Several presents were successively sent by Obeera, and they began to have a pretty good stock. About this time an order was made, that none of the sailors should go on shore without permission; and one of them was sentenced to run the gauntlet thrice round the deck, while the crew whipped him with nettles, as a punishment for his having been discovered in drawing some nails from the ship, to bestow among his favourites.

The captain was again visited by the queen, who was invited, with some of the officers, to attend her home. She tied wreaths of plaited flowers round their hats; and on the captain's she put a tuft of feathers, by way of distinction. The commander having intimated that he should leave the island in seven days, she made signs for him *to stay twenty*; but when she found this request *could not be granted*, she burst into tears.

The vessel was now so well stored with and poultry, that the decks were covered them; and as the men chiefly subsisted on tables, they were killed faster than necessary boar and a sow, of the Otaheitean breed, brought over, and presented to Mr. Stephen cretary of the admiralty; the latter of which in farrowing.

The captain intent on his departure, made liberal presents to the old Indian who had been the most essential service to them, and among articles, he gave the queen a cat in kitten, turkies, geese, and hens. Peas and other European garden seeds and fruits were sown here they appeared to make such progress, that it not doubted they would soon arrive at perfection.

On the 25th a party was sent on shore to reconnoitre the country, and a tent was erected for the purpose of observing an eclipse of the sun. When the observation was ended, the captain took his telescope to the queen, who, looking through it, expressed great surprise to see several objects familiar to her, and not visible by the naked eye, brought within the compass of vision. She was after invited to dine on board, with a large retinue.

A party, who had obtained leave to examine the island, reported that, on their first landing, they took the old Indian guide with them, and proceeded up the bank of the river, till the ground rising almost perpendicular, they were all obliged to walk on one side. On the borders of the valley, through which the river flowed, the soil was black and rich; and here they saw several high walled gardens, and plenty of poultry and hogs. In many places channels were cut, to

duct the water from the hills to the plantations. The bread-fruit and apple-trees were planted in rows upon the hills, and the cocoa-nut grew upon the level ground.

When they had walked about four miles, along the meandering course of the river, they sat down to refresh themselves under an apple tree. Here they were alarmed by a loud shout from a number of the natives; on which they betook themselves to their arms, but their guide ordered them to sit still. He singly approached his countrymen, when they withdrew in silence; but soon returned with refreshments, for which they had a suitable recompence.

The English again proceeded, looking for metals and ores, but found nothing of that kind worth notice. The Indian being fatigued, expressed his desire to return; but gave directions to some of his countrymen, to clear the way for them over a mountain. This they performed with much alacrity, laying the cut branches of the trees, in a very ceremonious manner, at the feet of the sailors; after which they painted themselves red with the berries of one tree, and stained their garments yellow with the bark of another. By the friendly assistance of these guides, they ascended the mountains with some difficulty, and again refreshed themselves on the summit; when they observed other ridges, terminating their view towards the interior, whose superior altitude made their present situation appear as if in a valley.

Towards the sea, however, their prospect was *inexpressibly* beautiful; the slopes of the hills being covered with trees, and the valleys with *grasses*, while the whole country was interspersed

with villages. They saw but few houses; mountains above them; but as the smoke observed in many places, it was conjectured the highest were inhabited. Many springs issued from the sides of the mountains, which served to fertilize them. The soil, even in the high places, was rich, and the sugar-cane grew wild, as well as turmeric and ginger.

They now descended towards the ship, occasionally deviating from the direct way, tempted by the pleasant situation of several houses, the inhabitants of which shewed them the greatest attention.

The lieutenant, who was of the party, planted the stones of cherries, peaches, and plums, and sowed some garden seeds. In the afternoon he rested on a delightful spot, where the natives dressed two hogs and several fowls for their entertainment. Having rewarded their guides for their diligence and care, they returned to the ship.

On the 26th, the captain received another message from the queen, who did not come empty-handed. A greater number of the natives now lined the shores, than they had ever seen before, and among them were some persons of consequence. The queen strongly solicited Captain Wallis to prolong his stay; but when she was informed he must sail the very next day, she burst into a flood of tears; asking when he would come back, and on hearing that the boat waited to convey her on shore, she went over the ship's side, making marks of the sincerest grief.

It should be observed, that the old Indian had promised that his son should accompany Captain Wallis; but when the moment arrived, he

was not to be found ; and it is probable, that paternal affection overcame his resolution of parting with him.

Two boats being sent off early next morning, to take in some water, the officer, alarmed at the concourse of the natives, was preparing to return, on which Oberea came forward, and ordering the Indians to withdraw, made signs for the boats to land. While they were filling the water, she threw some presents into the boat, and earnestly desired once more to be taken on board ; but when she found the officer would not receive her, she ordered her own canoe to be manned, and was followed by many others. After remaining an hour on board, weeping and lamenting, the English taking advantage of a fresh breeze, got under sail. She then tenderly embraced the captain and officers, and left the ship ; but as the wind soon fell, the queen once more was rowed up in her canoe, and coming up under the bow of the ship, renewed her lamentations. The captain made her some parting presents, both for use and ornament, all which she received in mournful silence. The breeze again springing up, a last and final adieu now passed, accompanied with mutual tears.

The place where the ship lay at anchor, was called Port Royal Harbour, and is situated in 17 deg. 30 min. south latitude, and 150 deg. west longitude.

Capt. Wallis remarked, that the men of Otaheite were in general from five feet seven to five feet ten inches in height ; while the usual standard of the women, was three inches shorter ; but the symmetry of their form was the most perfect, and

the features of many would have ranked among beauties of the first class. The plexion of the males employed on the war is a reddish tinge; but the natural colour agreeable tawny. The colour of the hair contrary to that of the continental inhabitants Asia, Africa, and America, which is almost universally black, is here diversified like that of Europeans; and many of the children have locks. When loose, it has a natural strength but they are accustomed to tie it in two braids one on each side of the head, or in a single braid in the middle. They anoint their heads with oil, mixed with a fragrant smelling root.

Two pieces of cloth, in some respects resembling China paper, form their apparel: in them a hole is made for the head to pass through and this depends to the middle of the leg. The whole is wrapped round the body, and the drapery not inelegant. Their cloth is made of the bark of a tree.

One of the queen's attendants, who took pleasure in imitating the English, was provided with a lieutenant's uniform, in which he looked very well. The officers, who were generally carried on shore, because it was shoal, gave occasion to this man to imitate them in respect too; and that he might be quite in fashion, he attempted to use a knife and fork. At first he afforded them much diversion and awkwardness, as his hand was frequently brought to his mouth, while the fork retained the food that he intended to swallow.

The Otahiteans eat dog's flesh, in company with hogs, poultry, and fish. They make a fire by rubbing two sticks together, till the

ion ignites them*. The method of dressing food, by roasting, Captain Wallis found very agreeable to his palate, and even thought it preferable to any he had ever known before. The sauces they used, were salt water and fruit; they had no other knives but such as were made of shells. Their only liquor is water.

The English concluded, from the scars which they perceived on their bodies, that they were ignorant of wars; and it appeared that they had some knowledge of practical surgery. One of the sailors having run a splinter into his foot, his messmate tried in vain to extract it with his knife, which one of the Indians observing, made an instrument out of a shell with his teeth, with which he presently drew it out; and some of the apple-tree being applied to the wound, it was healed in two days.

Captain Wallis discovered no traces of religious worship among these people; but he saw several stones on the island, on the outside of which were stakes fixed in the ground, whercon were the bones of human creatures, as well as of dogs and swine. The area was inclosed and covered with stones, and whenever the natives entered it, they exhibited the appearance of sorrow; whence it was supposed, that these were the places of sepulture of their ancestors.

The Dolphin sailed from Otaheite on the 27th of July, and passed by the Duke of York's Island, the next day discovered land, which they named Sir Charles Saunders' Island. They saw but few in-

We have given only a brief account of Captain Wallis's observations on the manners of this people, as they must be detailed in the subsequent voyages of Captain Cook.

habitants. Cocoa-nut and other trees lined the shores.

They made land again on the 30th, to which they gave the appellation of Lord Howe's Island; and afterwards approaching some dangerous shoals, they named them the Scilly Islands, from the resemblance they bore to that rocky appendage to Britain.

Steering westward, they came in sight of two other islands, which they distinguished by the names of Keppel's and Boscawen's Islands. On the former they descried several inhabitants, but steered towards the latter, as its appearance was more promising; but some breakers, at a considerable distance from the shore, prevented them from landing there. The boat, however, was sent off, and returned with cocoas and other fruits. The officer who landed, observed that the inhabitants somewhat resembled those of Otaheite. Some of them ventured into the boat, but soon jumped out, and swam back again. These islanders were dressed in a sort of matting, and were remarkable for having the joints of their little fingers cut off.

Finding no convenient watering place here, and the ship having received such damages as rendered her unfit for a stormy navigation, they resolved to steer for Tinian, and from thence to Batavia, in their route to Europe.

Land again saluted their view on the 16th of August, to which, in honour of their commander, the officers gave the name of Wallis Island. The coast is very rocky, and the trees grow down almost to meet the tide. The natives had no covering but a sort of mat round their waist, and they were all armed with clubs. These savages attempted to steal the cutter, by hauling her on the rocks.

rocks; but a gun being fired close to the face of one of them, they desisted from the enterprize, and fled in precipitation. Though no sort of metal was seen in any of these new-discovered islands, yet, as soon the natives were complimented with a piece of iron, they immediately set about sharpening it, which they never did with brass or copper. Was this instinct, or did it proceed from an intuitive knowledge of the qualities of metals?

From hence they directed their course to the north-west; and on the 28th were attended by a number of birds. Having caught one of them, it was observed to be web-footed; but in every other respect resembled a dove. On the 3d of September they discovered land, which they imagined belonged to the *Piscadores*. Same day an Indian proa approached the vessel, but did not come within hailing. On the 18th they made the island of Saypan, and next day anchored at Tinian.

The boats were now sent on shore, and soon returned, laden with cocoa-nuts, oranges, and limes, when tents were erected on shore for the reception of the sick; among whom were the captain and first lieutenant.

A hunting party soon set out, which presently caught a bull of great magnitude, and found bread-fruit in great plenty. These hunting expeditions, however, were rendered so fatiguing by traversing the thickets, that one party was obliged to relieve another. Meanwhile, the second lieutenant being stationed with a party, in the northern quarter of the island, where, it was judged, cattle was most plentiful; a boat was sent out to bring off the spoils. Thus, in a

short time, they supplied themselves with plenty of such stores as the island afforded.

The sick being pretty well recovered, they left Tinian on the 15th of October, and steered westward. On the 23d they encountered a violent storm, in which the ship made an unusual quantity of water. This was attended by thunder, lightning, and rain, and such a violent sea, as swept the decks of many heavy articles. For four days its fury did not abate; but at last the sun appeared, and the weather became moderate. During this storm they lost a man, who, it was supposed, tumbled overboard in liquor.

On the 3d of November they discovered three islands, to which they gave the several names of Sandy Island, Small Key, and Long Island; and next day they saw another, which they called New Island. All these lay in the 10th degree of south latitude, and in 247 deg. west longitude. On the 8th, the inferior officers and men were called on to deliver up the log, and the journals of the voyage. On the 16th they crossed the equinoctial line, and came again into south latitude.

Next day, they saw Pulo Toté and Pulo Weste, and soon after had sight of seven other islands. The following night was extremely tempestuous, and so dark, that the flashes of lightning alone gave them a momentary light. One of these flashes, however, providentially afforded them the view of a large sail, which was almost aboard them before she was discovered; but as the storm was too loud to permit them to hail each other, they passed in mutual ignorance of country and destination. *This was the first ship they had seen since their separation from the Swallow, and under such circumstances*

ances of danger, the sight could not fail to be alarming than grateful.

Next morning, they discovered Pulo Taya, and they anchored towards the close of day, after some impediments from currents, by which they lost weigh and anchor, they directed their course for Sumatra.

They soon made this coast; and without any occurrence, anchored in the road of Batavia on the 3d of November. Here the captain saluted the Dutch governor, which compliment returned with an additional gun; and having obtained permission to purchase provisions, customary, they soon procured an adequate supply.

At this time, however, it was thought proper to be exact with punishment such as should bring order on board; and none were permitted to go on shore, except on the calls of duty, to prevent the noxious effects that might arise from the immoderate use of Batavia arrack.

When they found the Falmouth man of war, in a most shattered condition. The war-officers of this distressed ship forwarded a letter on to Captain Wallis, in which they set

“that the Dutch had caused their powder thrown into the sea; that their gunner was killed; that their misfortunes had deprived the captain of his senses, who now lay in the hospital; that their stores were quite spoiled, and their carpenter at the point of death.”

As situated, they requested that the captain should give them a passage to England; or, at least, *dismiss them from the ship.* But they received no answer, which a stern sense of duty, that neither of these requests could be complied with.

complied with; for, as they had taken charge of stores, they must wait for orders from England.

In their reply to this, they observed, "that they had not received a single order since they had been left in Batavia Road; that they had ten years pay due; and that they would sooner submit to any fate, than remain in that wretched condition; that they were never permitted to sleep on shore; and when sick, no one had the humanity to attend them; that the Malays frequently robbed them; and that they expected nothing but destruction from those people, who had already carried their enmity to the most intolerable pitch." Notwithstanding these representations, all the alleviation they could obtain from Captain Wallis was, a promise of making their hard case known in England. On this apparently unfeeling conduct we cannot forbear observing, "that as an officer he might do right, but as a man he did wrong."

The Dolphin being in want of some stores, Captain Wallis went on shore with a design of procuring them; but the Dutch were so exorbitant in their demands, that he did not think it prudent to comply with them, and accordingly determined to depart, which he did on the 8th of December, without losing a single man in this mortal climate, and having only two sick. This may be ascribed to the restraints wisely laid on them in regard to liquors; but though they escaped immediate danger, they were soon visited by the flux, which proved a great affliction.

They came to an anchor off Prince's Island, on the 14th, where they took in wood and water, and purchased refreshments. Here they buried
In addition to the flux, they

were soon visited by a putrid fever, which rendered it dangerous to attend the sick.

At this time the ship was very leaky; nevertheless, they proceeded on their voyage till the 10th of January, when the sickness began to abate. On the 24th, they were attacked by a violent storm, which rent their sails, and did them other serious damage. Weathering it, they were cheered with the sight of land on the 30th, and on the 4th of February they anchored in Table Bay.

The captain having saluted the governor of the Cape, fresh meat and vegetables were speedily procured to the great refreshment of the sick. Orders were likewise given to procure lodgings for them on shore; but the rate demanded for them was so extravagant, and at the same time the small-pox was making such ravages, that the captain, with the governor's permission, erected tents on a plain about two miles from the town, for the reception of the diseased.

Strict orders were given that no spirituous liquors should be carried to the tents; but extra provisions, and other proper comforts were provided for the sick; between whom and the town all communication was cut off. Meanwhile, all those who were capable of labour were employed in the repairs of the ship, which were nearly completed by the 10th of February.

The orders hitherto given out, were now somewhat relaxed, and such as were sufficiently recovered, were permitted to visit the town, and to make short excursions up the country, for the better renovation of their health. As to the captain, he still remained indisposed, and resided at a country house some miles from the shore. Here
thof

those necessaries, so dear at Batavia, were purchased on reasonable terms; and fresh water was procured by distillation, to convince the captains of the Indiamen, then lying in the bay, of the practicability of obtaining wholesome water at sea. But from the experiments made on board the Dolphin, the process appears too complex and expensive to obtain water in any considerable quantity; and this expedient should never be trusted to, when it is possible to obtain other supplies.

All hands being mustered on board, and only three found incapable of duty, on the 3d of March they set sail, and in fourteen days reached St. Helena. The captain going on shore was saluted from the fort, and invited to take up his residence there as long as he chose to remain on the island; but having taken in some immediate supplies, the wind proving favourable next day, he weighed and departed.

They crossed the equinoctial on the 28th, and on the 11th of May saw the Savage sloop of war in chase of a vessel, which Captain Wallis assisted to capture, and found her laden with tea and brandy. He now held on his course for England, and, on the 20th of May 1768, cast anchor in the Downs, having thus accomplished the circumnavigation of the globe, and added several important islands to its formerly known domains.

VOYAGE OF
CAPTAIN CARTERET,
IN THE SWALLOW SLOOP,
ROUND THE WORLD.

THE separation of the Swallow from the Dolphin, commanded by Captain Wallis, has already been mentioned. Perhaps it was fortunate that they did not fail together; as by pursuing different tracks, they had more scope for discovery, and opportunity for observation.

Captain Carteret had sailed with Commodore Byron, and consequently was not unacquainted with the nature of the voyage in which he was now to act as a principal. Nothing remarkable attended the Swallow till the 11th of April, the day of separation from her consort, when lying under land, near the mouth of the Straights of Magellan, she lost the benefit of that gale which wafted the Dolphin into the South Seas, and thus they were finally parted.

Soon after the Swallow experienced a violent tempest, during which they were in danger of being dashed on shore. A boat being sent out in quest of an anchoring place, the darkness of the following night was such, that they were obliged to hoist lights and fire half hour guns, to enable her to keep in company. Next morning the
boat

boat's crew succeeded in finding a commodious bay, in which the Swallow came to an anchor.

The vessel being secured, and the captain retired to rest, he was almost immediately disturbed by a hurry and clamour on deck, which he soon understood originated from a supposition that they saw the Dolphin. But this appearance arising only from water forced up and whirled in the air by a gust of wind, soon vanished; and the most sanguine now lost all hopes of seeing their consort again.

In a few days Captain Carteret proceeded, with a determination to accomplish the voyage which he had undertaken; but it was an uncomfortable reflection, that the cloth, linen, cutlery wares, and toys, were all on board the Dolphin, so that he had no articles fit for the Indian commerce.

Soon after they left the bay, the wind suddenly shifting, rose to a storm that had almost sent them to the bottom. They could neither venture, however, to take in any sails, for fear of being carried towards some rocky islands by the currents, nor could they return to the Straights without the danger of a lee-shore, which, in spite of their efforts, they were rapidly approaching. In this dilemma, they staved the greatest part of the water casks, and by carrying a press of sail, they were fortunate enough to escape shipwreck, and to get into the open sea.

They now steered along the coast of Chili; but as their stock of water had been too much reduced for a voyage of the purposed length, the captain resolved to touch at Juan Fernandez, or at Massafuero, to take in an adequate supply. The wind, however, continued contrary for some days,
attended

attended with thunder, lightning, and hail, which increased the horrors of the tempest ; and on the 1st of May, a prodigious sea laid the whole ship, for some space, under water ; while, at the same time, it blew a hurricane, and the rain descended in torrents.

The ship righting herself, and escaping some other dangerous waves, the weather began to grow more moderate ; and in some degree they repaired the damage they had sustained. On the 10th of May they saw Juan Fernandez, and sailed round to Cumberland Bay, on the east side of it. And now, to their astonishment, they found that the Spaniards had fortified the island, and that their colours were flying on a fort. As the Swallow was attempting to work into Cumberland Bay, one of the Spanish boats came off ; but finding the stranger was kept at a distance by the wind, she ceased to pursue. The Swallow, having only English colours on board, did not hoist any, nor did they think it prudent to make any farther attempts to land.

Heartily chagrined at this disappointment, they steered for Massafuero, where they arrived on the 12th ; but the beach was so rocky, and the surf ran so high, that it was difficult for the ablest swimmers to force their way through the breaches. Next morning, however, the boats landed, and brought off some casks full of water ; but from the difficulty and the danger attending this service, some days were spent in laying in a very moderate stock. When the cutter returned on the 17th, the lieutenant brought information that such torrents of rain had deluged the land, as to carry off *several of the water casks*, and that the men, with *great difficulty*, saved themselves from perishing.

Several rivulets having been formed by the rain that had fallen, the lieutenant proposed to go and fill the remaining casks ; but he had not long left the ship, before there were all the signs of an approaching storm. So violently did it thunder and lighten, and the darkness increased to such a degree, that the captain began to be under the most painful apprehensions for the safety of the cutter. However, she providentially arrived just in time to save her from a squall, that, in all human probability, would have sent her to the bottom. Unfortunately, three of the sailors were obliged to be left on the island, naked as they swam on shore, and exposed to all the fury of the tempest, who, during the night, suffered as many hardships as it was possible for human nature to support. By resolution, however, they surmounted all difficulties, and arrived in safety at the watering place, where their brother sailors cheerfully shared with them their clothes and provisions. After proper rest, they appeared to be perfectly recovered, and obtained much credit from their enterprising spirit.

Here they caught plenty of fish with much facility, which was an acceptable relief. On the 20th, the ship, which had been standing off and on for some time, came to an anchor again. That night and the succeeding day they had very unfavourable weather. When it grew a little calm, the seamen landed to kill seals, to obtain oil from their fat for the use of the lamps. On the 22d, the boats returned with a number of pintado birds, which they got from the natives ; who informed them, that during the late high wind, these birds flew in vast flocks into their fires, and were easily caught.

Having

. Having employed every interval of fine weather in watering, with as much success as the short duration of calms would permit, the captain was now impatient to be gone. Accordingly, on the 25th, orders were issued for all those on shore to repair on board with all possible expedition. At that time the ship was driven from her moorings, and was dragging her anchors. While they were waiting for the boats under bare poles, the wind rose with such violence, as to lift the waves above the mast's head. This evening the long-boat and ten men were taken on board; but the cutter, with the lieutenant and eighteen more, still remained on shore. Next morning, the ship stood in for land, but was some hours before she discovered the cutter, whose crew had made several ineffectual attempts to get off the preceding night; but their bark filling with water, they were glad to get her again on shore. Missing the ship next morning, they supposed she had sailed without them; and thought of nothing but of being obliged to wait till the return of summer, and to attempt a passage for Juan Fernandez.

The island of Massafuero, on the coast of which they were in such danger, is about twenty-two miles in circumference, of a triangular form, and at some distance appears like an immense rock. It has several good anchoring places, and abounds in goats, a variety of birds, and some useful vegetables. The seas are replenished with cod, halibut, and crawfish.

Having quitted this coast, the captain sailed northward, with a view of falling in with the trade wind. After proceeding farther in this direction than he intended, he searched for the islands of St. Felix and St. Ambrose, and then for

Davis Land ; but all without success. Incas to the latter, he concluded it to be visionary.

Thus they continued wandering over the ocean till the 17th of June, when the weather became dark and cold, with sleet, rain, and burly thunder. In the midst of this gloom, which scarcely ever cheered by sun-shine, the squalls and waves, they were obliged to carry as much sail as possible, lest they should perish of famine, before they could reach a port where they might be supplied with provisions.

At length, on the 2d of July, they saw a verdant island, down the side of which ran a stream of fresh water, to which they gave the name of Pitcairn's Island.

Soon after, the crew began to be visited by scurvy ; but they were well supplied with what fell from the clouds. On the 4th, they discovered Osnaburgh Island ; and on the 12th two other islands, where they found the birds tame, that the sailors caught them in their hands. These were called the Duke of Gloucester's lands : they neither furnished water nor useful vegetables, and, of course, were uninhabited.

For nearly three weeks, from this time, they were perplexed with alternate storms and calms. They were now, by computation, five thousand four hundred miles from the continent of Africa, and reasonably despaired of finding any considerable track of land in that direction.

The scurvy daily increasing its ravages, and the ship being in a shattered condition, the captain steered northwards, in hopes of gaining the *vantage* of the trade wind, whereby he might reach some island where refreshments were procured.

Seeing flocks of birds on the 25th, they concluded that they were in the vicinity of land, but discovered none. On the 3d of August they saw more sea-fowls; and the current, which had hitherto run northward, now changed to a contrary direction; from which circumstance the captain concluded, that the passage between New Holland and New Zealand opened near this latitude, which they found to be 10 deg. 18 min. south, and 177 deg. 13 min. west longitude.

On the 10th, the ship sprang a leak, where it was not possible to reach it; a disaster that filled them with much anxiety. However, in two days, they discovered several islands, and sailing towards the nearest, they came to an anchor.

Here they soon saw some of the natives, who were woolly headed and quite naked. A boat being sent on shore, the officer reported, that there was excellent water near the coast; but that it would be with difficulty procured, on account of the thick and tangled woods, which descended to the very beach. In consideration of this, and the danger of the natives; whose disposition they had not tried, a more convenient place was determined to be sought for; and the master, who headed the party, was particularly enjoined to be on his guard, and to endeavour to conciliate the natives by such presents as were most likely to be acceptable to them.

The long-boat having brought off some water, was again dispatched on the same errand; but as the Indians were observed to be collecting in numbers, a signal was made for her immediate return. Soon after, three of the natives were *seen sitting* on the beach, attentively viewing the ship. On the lieutenant's approaching them it

the boat, they retired, and were presently joined by three more. After a conference, the latter quickly advanced to the boat, on which the lieutenant landed, and offered some presents to engage their attention. But instead of accepting what was tendered them, they discharged a shower of arrows, and then took their flight. None of the English were hurt: nor did it appear that their fire, which was returned, did any execution.

The master and his party, acting with less caution, were involved in a skirmish with the Indians, and this officer returned with three arrows sticking in his body. He reported, that being arrived at a place where there were some houses, but few inhabitants, he resolved to land, with four of his party, well armed. The natives, after recovering from the first alarm excited by his approach, came up and accepted his presents with apparent satisfaction, and gave him some fish, yams, and cocoa-nuts, in return.

He then proceeded to the houses; but soon after perceiving the Indians in motion, he made haste to the boat; but before he could effect his intention, a general attack was made, both by sea and land, which induced the English to fire, which killed and wounded many of the aggressors. Still, however, they continued to fight with great resolution, advancing breast high into the water, and when the boat got at too great a distance for the assailants from land, the canoes pursued her; nor did they desist till several were killed and wounded, and one of the enemy's canoes sunk.

Such was the master's account of this unfortunate transaction; but it afterwards appeared, *that the Indians shewed an amicable disposition,*
" *they were appeased by selling a cocoa-tree,*

which they expressed their desire should not be meddled with. It seems the master was highly culpable, and that, in defiance of the advice of his men, he would not retire till he had provoked an attack. However that might be, the consequence was fatal to him and three of his party, who died of their wounds.

Though this rencontre rendered their situation irksome, the captain resolved to set about repairing the ship. After firing a gun into the woods, in order to disperse such of the natives as might be lying in ambush, a party was sent ashore; and the cutter, under the command of the lieutenant, was ordered, by repeated firing, to keep the coast clear. Notwithstanding this caution, a discharge of arrows was made by the Indians, by which one of the sailors was dangerously wounded.

The captain perceiving this, recalled the boats, and fired his cannon into the woods; and, from the dying groans that were heard, it is too probable, that the miserable natives suffered very severely for their temerity.

The master now dying of the wounds he had received in his imprudent conflict, and the captain and lieutenant being likewise alarmingly ill, it was resolved to proceed to the southward, as there was little probability of procuring proper refreshments where the vessel then lay. This island received the appellation of Egmont Island.

From Swallow Bay, as they called it, they sailed on the 27th of August, and same day discovered Portland Island. In ranging along the coast of Egmont Island, they came to the place where the *skirmish* had happened, from which circumstance they called it Bloody Bay. Here they saw a number of houses, not ill built, on the shore.

and observed one of larger dimensions than the rest, which seemed to have been constructed in the kind of public hall. Many gardens, planted with vegetables, and fenced with stone walls, scattered about the neighbourhood. About five miles from this village they also saw a town defended by an angular fortification of stone. At a league farther, a bay was discovered, into which a river emptied itself, which they denominated Granville's Bay: near this was another large Indian town. As the vessel passed this, the natives came out, and danced before the houses, moving in circles, and holding up what appeared to be bunches of grass, with which they stroked each other. Proceeding farther, they came to a headland which they named Carteret's Point; near which they saw a canoe, with an awning over it, and another fortified town, where the Indians danced as before. Some of them put off in their canoes to take a view of the ship, but would not venture to come on board.

They next arrived at a small island, which was named Trevanian Island, which seemed very populous. Several canoes advanced to attack the boat that was sent to sound, as soon as they thought she was at a sufficient distance from the ship. Having discharged a flight of arrows, the English fired and killed one man and wounded another. A gun, loaded with grape shot, fired from the ship, on which the canoes precipitately retreated, except that which carried the wounded man; who being taken on board and examined by the surgeon, was found to have one of his arms broken, and that a shot had passed through his head. The surgeon being of opinion that the latter wound was mortal, the Indian

placed in his canoe, which he rowed with one hand towards the shore.

The canoe was formed of the hollow trunk of a tree. The wounded man, who was young, appeared almost as black as the negroes of Guinea : he had woolly hair, good features, and was perfectly naked.

As they sailed along the shore, they saw plantains, bananas, and cocoas, and numbers of hogs and poultry ; but the captain continuing much indisposed, and not having officers sufficient to direct on board the ship, he had no opportunity of attempting a friendly traffic with the natives, and he was not in a condition to obtain by force the refreshments he wanted, for which the crew daily became more distressed.

Thus situated, he gave immediate orders to proceed northwards, in hopes of discovering the country which Dampier has distinguished by the name of New Britain.

Captain Carteret gave these islands the general appellation of Queen Charlotte's Islands. Besides these, he saw some smaller islands, to which he gave the name of distinguished characters.

The natives of the country which he named Egmont Island, have canoes capable of containing ten or twelve people, but they have no sails. The inhabitants are expert swimmers, and very active and vigorous. Their arrows are so sharp, and discharged with such force, that one of them wounded a man, after passing through the wash-board of the boat. These weapons are pointed with flint ; for no metal was seen here.

On the 20th of August they discovered Gower's Island, the natives of which seemed of the same race, and to follow the same modes of living as
the

those of the other islands already described. Here they fortunately procured some cocoa-nuts in exchange for nails; and the inhabitants intimated, that next morning they would furnish a farther supply; but the currents during the night had carried the ship considerably to the south, and brought them in view of two other islands, which they named Simpson's and Carteret's Islands. These islands bore to windward of the ship, which induced them to return to Gower's Island, which promised abundant refreshments, particularly of cocoas. A boat, however, being sent on shore, the natives attempted to seize her; but failing, in return they lost one of their own canoes, loaded with cocoa-nuts.

The state of the ship and the health of the crew were now such as obliged them to endeavour to avoid being embayed, by steering a north-westerly course. On the 24th, they descried nine islands, which Carteret supposes to be the same as were named Ohang Java by Tasman. Eight of them are very small; the other is more extensive. The inhabitants are all of the negro race.

Next day they saw an island covered with verdure, and from the number of fires, they conjectured it was populous. They gave it the appellation of Sir Charles Hardy's Island. Soon after they discovered Winchelsea Island. On the 26th, they again came in sight of land, which they supposed was St. John's Island, discovered by Schouten.

They were now in sight of New Britain, and soon anchored in a deep bay, which Dampier has *denominated* St. George's. On the 28th, they *anchored off* Wallis Island; being now, by *reckoning*, seven-thousand five hundred miles west from

from the main land of America. The cutter was sent out to catch fish ; but finding none, she returned laden with cocoa-nuts.

The following day, after much fatigue, they sailed into English Cove, and immediately began to wood and water. Here they saw turtle in abundance ; and at low water, procured some cockles and rock oysters. This island produces a variety of vegetables and some fruits, by the daily use of which the crew soon began to gather health and strength. No inhabitants were seen here ; but several vestiges of huts and fires convinced them that it had lately been peopled. The soil produces palm-trees of various kinds ; aloes, canes, bamboos, rattans, betel-nuts, and nutmeg trees, with many other trees and shrubs, whose names were unknown. They saw two quadrupeds resembling dogs. In the woods they observed a large black bird, whose note resembled the barking of a dog.

After taking in such supplies as the island afforded, and repairing the ship in the best manner that circumstances would allow, they took possession of the country, with all the neighbouring islands, in the name of the King of Great Britain. They left the cove on the 7th of September, and the same day anchored close to a grove of cocoa-trees, from which they obtained a liberal supply of the fruit and the cabbage. This place they named Carteret's Harbour : it is formed by the main and two islands, to which they gave the appellation of Leigh's Island and Cocoa-nut Island.

It being now resolved to take advantage of the favourable monsoon for sailing to Batavia, they weighed on the 9th, and passed by the Duke of York's Island, and some smaller ones. On this island

island the houses are situated among groves of coa-nut trees, and thus form a delightful spect. Some of the Indians appeared to be ing off to the ship, but the wind freshening was not thought prudent to wait for them.

After naming some capes, they lost sight of New Britain on the 11th, when it was discovered that what they had taken for a bay, was in a strait, to which they gave the name of George's Channel.

In the evening they discovered a large, verdant island, which they denominated Sandwich Island. Off this the ship lay the greatest part of the night, while a perpetual noise, resembling that of a drum, was heard on shore. The weather fell calm before they had cleared the straits, a number of canoes approached the ship, and exchanged some commodities for nails and bits of iron, which they preferred to every thing that was shewn them. Some of these canoes, though formed of a single tree, were eighty or one hundred feet long. The natives had woolly heads; their features were not of the negro character. Their legs and arms were adorned with iron work: in other respects they were naked. They wore a kind of powder in their hair and beard, and a feather was stuck into the head of each above the ear. Their weapons consisted of a club and a spear. It was observed they had no fishing nets and cordage.

Having completed the navigation of George's Channel, in which they discovered and named several islands, during a passage of *hundred leagues*, they held on a westward course *till the 14th*, when they discovered several *islands*. Next morning some hundreds of

came off towards the ship, and were invited on board by every sign of amity and good will; but no sooner did they come within reach, than they discharged a shower of arrows at the seamen on the deck. A great gun and several muskets being fired, by which some were killed or wounded, soon sent them towards the shore; but other canoes advancing from a different quarter of the island, renewed the combat in a similar manner, and met with the same repulse, which seemed to satisfy them of their inability to cope with the strangers. In one of the canoes, which was taken, were found turtle and some other fish; also a species of fruit between an apple and a plum, hitherto unknown to Europeans.

Captain Carteret now coasted along the islands, to which he gave the general name of the Admiralty Islands. He describes them as beautifully picturesque. The largest is computed to be about fifty miles long; and that it produces many valuable articles, particularly spices, is extremely probable.

On the 19th, they discovered two small islands, covered with verdure, which they called Durour's and Maty's Islands. the inhabitants of which ran along the coast with lights during the night.

On the 24th, they discovered St. Stephen's Islands, abounding in beautiful trees. Next evening they saw three other islands, from whence the natives came off in canoes and went on board the ship. They bartered cocoa-nuts for bits of iron, which metal they seemed extravagantly fond of, and not unacquainted with its use. They called it parram, and intimated that a ship sometimes touched at their islands.

These people were copper coloured, and had fine black hair: their countenances were very agreeable, and their general appearance conciliating. They displayed their activity by running up to the mast head with the utmost speed. They ate and drank without reserve of every thing that was given them, and seemed perfectly at ease. A piece of fine matting, wrapped round the waist, constituted the whole of their dress; and good nature appeared to be the only rule of their actions.

The current wafting the ship along, the captain had no opportunity of landing, and was obliged to refuse gratifying these friendly people in that particular; though they readily offered hostages for the safe return of such as might be inclined to go on shore. Finding that the English could not be prevailed on to stop, one of the Indians absolutely refused to quit the ship; and in consequence was carried as far as Celebes, where he died. This man they named Joseph Freewill; and from him the largest of the islands was called Freewill Island, by the natives Pegan. The two other islands were Onata and Onello.

Some unimportant islands being observed in their passage, at last they arrived on the coast of Mindanao. The boat being sent out to sound, was fired at from the shore, and several canoes put off, on which the lieutenant retreated towards the ship, and the pursuers returned.

On the 2d of November, they anchored in a bay, where the boats were soon sent out to water, and no signs appeared that this part of the country was inhabited. However, a canoe soon came in sight; but after reconnoitring the ship, retired.

The succeeding night, a loud noise was heard on shore, somewhat like the war-song of the Americans. This indicating hostilities, the captain made preparations to repel them.

Next morning one of the boats was sent on shore for water, and another was ordered to be in readiness to lend assistance, in case of need. No sooner had the crew of the first landed, than several armed men advanced from the woods, one of whom shewed a white flag, which was construed into an expression of amity; and accordingly the lieutenant repeated the sign, which brought the parties together.

Two Indians, who spoke a smattering of Dutch and Spanish, having at last made themselves understood by the officer in the latter language, made several enquiries relative to the force and destination of the ship; to which they received satisfactory answers. It was then intimated, that the strangers might proceed to the town, and civilities were interchanged between the Indians and the officer.

The captain was highly pleased with this report, supposing that all matters were now in a proper train, particularly as he had received a supply of water without any impediment; but while he was enjoying these reflections, he perceived some hundreds of armed men collecting on the shore, holding up their targets and brandishing their swords, by way of defiance.

Notwithstanding this hostile appearance, the captain was still solicitous, if possible, to avoid extremities; and in consequence, sent the lieutenant to repeat the signal of peace. As the boat approached the shore, one of the natives beckoned the officer to come to him; but he did not

chuse to venture himself within the reach of the arrows of these deceitful islanders, and therefore returned to the ship.

The captain now concluded that there must be Dutchmen, or persons in the interest of that nation, on shore, to whose interference this apparent alteration of the behaviour of the natives was owing, and who had irritated them against the strangers, on finding they were English. With these impressions on his mind, he sailed from this place, appropriately named Deceitful Bay, with a full intention to visit the town; but the wind soon after proving unfavourable for his views, he steered directly for Batavia, which in such a critical situation, was perhaps the most prudent course.

They reached the Strait of Macassar on the 14th of November, and on the 21st, came in sight of two small, but beautiful islands, which were supposed to be the Taba Islands, laid down in the French charts. In a few days they crossed the equinoctial, and fell in with violent tornadoes and contrary currents.

By this time death had considerably diminished the crew, and sickness was wasting the remainder. They soon came in sight of the Little Pater Noster Islands, but they found it impossible, from the state of the weather and the currents, to land for refreshments, which hourly became more wanted. Indeed scarcely a man was free from the scurvy; and in this deplorable condition they were one night attacked by a piratical vessel, which had been seen the preceding evening. She engaged them with swivel guns and small arms; but though they could not see their enemy, the use of the great guns happened to be so well directed

acted, that they soon sent her with all her crew to the bottom. The Swallow received but trivial damage, and had no more than two of her crew wounded.

The vessel that was sunk, belonged to a pirate who employed no fewer than thirty in this business of plunder, and was the scourge and terror of these seas.

Disease increasing, by the 12th of December, they had lost thirteen men, and thirty more were at the point of death. To aggravate their affliction, by the change of the monsoon, they found it impossible to reach Batavia; and unless they made land, they knew that they must all perish. Thus circumstanced, they resolved to proceed for Macassar, a Dutch settlement in the island of Celebes; and happily they accomplished their design in a very few days.

No sooner had the Swallow arrived, than the governor sent a person on board, who seemed much alarmed, when he found that it was an English ship of war. Early next morning the captain dispatched a letter to the governor, requesting leave to purchase provisions, and to shelter his vessel till the season would permit him to proceed to the westward.

The boat which carried this dispatch was forbid to land, and the lieutenant refusing to deliver the letter to any other person but the governor himself, a message arrived, stating that this gentleman was indisposed, and that he had commissioned the shebandar and fiscal to fetch the letter. The lieutenant reluctantly delivered it up; and after waiting with his party for several hours, exposed to the heat of the sun, without any refreshment, they were at last given to understand

that the governor had ordered two gentlemen to wait on the captain with his answer.

Soon after the boat returned to the ship, two gentlemen, of the names of De Cerf and De Launay, arrived with dispatches, couched in the most remonstratory style; desiring the ship instantly to depart from the port, and insisting that she should not touch on any part of the coast, nor land men or goods within the limits of the governor's jurisdiction.

The inhumanity and incivility of this message sensibly affected the captain. As the strongest argument that could be used among persons so void of feeling, he shewed the deputies the miserable state of his crew, and urged the necessity of the case, as well as the propriety of relieving the subjects of a power at peace with their oppressors who were so deplorably situated. The observation made was, that their orders were absolute, and must be obeyed.

Incensed at this brutal treatment, Captain Carteret at last declared, that he would come to anchor close to the town; and if they persisted in refusing him refreshments, he would fight with his crew, and sell their lives as dear as his own. This menace seemed to have some effect; they now entreated the captain to remain in his present situation, till farther orders; which he promised to do, provided an answer should be sent before the sea breeze set in the next morning.

While matters were in this state, a sloop and another vessel full of soldiers anchored near the bows of the *Swallow*, but refused to have any communication with the English. When *Captain Carteret* weighed with the sea breeze, *the Swallow* did the same, and closely followed him. *The Swallow* had dropped anchor near the

r. Douglas and some other gentlemen came on board, and expressed their surprise, that the captain had dared to advance so far; but he alleged that he had only acted in conformity to his delegation; and repeated, that the present situation his men would sufficiently justify his conduct to every candid and humane mind.

These gentlemen brought some provisions and refreshments, which were extremely grateful to the English; and after much negotiation, or rather altercation, in which Captain Carteret displayed a manly and resolute spirit, it was at last concluded, that the Swallow should proceed to a bay at a little distance, where an hospital for the sick might be erected, and provisions generally supplied; or if there was any deficiency in the latter particular, they might receive relief occasionally from the town.

These conditions were very acceptable to Captain Carteret; but to avoid future misunderstanding or blame, he required that they should be ratified by the governor and council, which was afterwards done in due form. Thus this disagreeable business was settled; and the jealousy of the Dutch, in regard to their monopoly of spice, confirmed by a new testimony of their unfeeling conduct to preserve it.

Next day an officer from the town came on board, to whom the captain applied for an acceptance of his bills, on the English government. As he promised he would endeavour to get them; but in the evening he returned and informed him, that there was no person in the town, who had any money to remit to Europe, and that the public chest was quite empty,

This was a new and a serious difficulty; however, it was at last surmounted, by an order sent to the resident at Bonthain, who had money to remit, and who, in consequence, received the bill in question. Matters being thus accommodated, they sailed on the 20th of December, and next day anchored in the road of Bonthain, at which time guard-boats were moored between them and the shore, to prevent their having any communication with the natives of the country.

The captain having paid his respects to the resident, in order to settle the mode of procuring supplies, had a house appointed for himself, in the vicinity of a small Dutch fort; while an hospital was fitted up for the sick, who were strictly guarded, and confined to very narrow limits, nor allowed to have any intercourse with the inhabitants. The provision business was entirely engrossed by the Dutch soldiers, and their profits on it were immense; as they sometimes exacted more than a thousand per cent. for what they had extorted from the natives on their own terms.

Captain Carteret having remonstrated to the resident, on this flagrant violation of justice and of all principle, he was promised redress, but found that the former exactions and extortions were still carried on without the least abatement. In fact, the venality of the commander of the Dutch officers seemed to sanction the opinion, that the soldiers were merely the agents of their officers, or at best the participators in the frauds that were practised both on the English and the natives.

Soon after, some ships arriving from Banda, the captain found means to procure a few casks of salt provisions. On the 28th, above a hundred

fail of proas came into Bonthain Bay. These vessels, which are engaged in fishing round the shores, send the produce of their labours to China for sale.

About the middle of January, Captain Carteret received a letter from Macassar, informing him that the Dolphin had arrived at Batavia. On the 19th of February, Le Cerf, to whom the command of the guard had been entrusted, was recalled; and soon after some of the guard-boats were ordered back.

In the beginning of March, the resident of Bonthain received a letter from the Governor of Macassar, desiring information when the English would sail for Batavia; though he must know, that this navigation was impracticable, till the eastern monsoon set in, which takes place in May. In addition to this suspicious circumstance, a canoe was frequently observed paddling round the ship at night; but always made off as soon as discovered.

Various conjectures were formed, in regard to the general unfavourable aspect of affairs; and in the meanwhile, information was privately conveyed to the captain, by letter, that his destruction was meditated by the instigation of the Dutch; and that the Prince of Bony, who was in strict alliance with them, was to put the design in execution. The pretended grounds for these violent and treacherous proceedings, were to prevent the English from forming connections with such of the natives as had not submitted to the Dutch government.

On receiving this alarming intelligence, the truth or falsity of which could not be exactly ascertained, the captain, on either event, resolved to put his

self in a posture of defence. He had certainly reason to suspect some unfair dealings were going on, but he could not trace them to their immediate authors. As a proof, however, that he was on his guard, he communicated the substance of the information he had received to the Dutch; and in return he had a letter from the Governor of Macassar, denying his having any knowledge of the pretended project, and desiring that the author of the falsity might be given up. This requisition the captain did not chuse to comply with; as he well knew, that whether the information was true or false, his informant would be equally subjected to punishment. Here the business dropped.

An adequate supply of provisions, wood, and water, being taken in, and the health of the crew indifferently restored, they sailed from Bonthain on the 22d of May, and steering along the shore, came to an anchor the same evening, between Celebes and the island of Tonikaky. Proceeding next morning on their voyage, they came successively in sight of Salombo, Luback, and Carimon Java.

On the 3d of June, they cast anchor in the road of Batavia, after having with difficulty prevented the ship from sinking, by the constant working of pumps, during the whole passage from Celebes.

Having fired guns of salutation, the captain attended the governor, requesting permission to repair his vessel, on which he was directed to petition the council. The day the council next met, the captain sent a letter, representing the *condition of his ship*, and desiring permission to *repair her*. Some days were now lost in altercations, respecting the transactions at Bonthain; the governor and council insisting, that the cap-
tai

tain should sign a formal declaration, that he believed the report, of an intention formed at Celebes of cutting off the ship, to be false and calumnious; but this he steadily refused to do.

On the 18th, the captain was given to understand, that orders had been issued for repairing the ship at Onrust, whether a pilot conducted her. The wharfs, however, being pre-engaged by other vessels, the repairs could not immediately be taken in hand.

When the Swallow at last was examined, she was found to be so decayed and rotten, that the Dutch carpenter would not undertake to repair her, without shifting her entire bottom; till the captain had certified under his hand, that whatever should be done, was in consequence of his own express direction. This precaution the Dutch artizan insisted on, lest the vessel should not be able to swim to England, and the blame be imputed to him.

While Captain Carteret stayed at this port, he often visited Admiral Houting, a gentleman distinguished for the urbanity of his manners, and his civility to strangers; and from him the captain experienced many instances of disinterested kindness.

The state and splendor of the Governor of Batavia did not escape the observation of our navigator. When he goes publicly abroad, he is attended by horse-guards, and two black footmen run before his carriage. If any other vehicle meets the governor's, it is obliged to be drawn on one side, and the company to get out and pay their respects to him. Nor must any one pass his excellency's coach, though in ever so great haste. The same rules are observed, with regard to the honour paid

to the members of the council, except that they are saluted by the company standing up in their carriages, and have only one footman preceding them.

The master of the hotel, where Captain Carteret lodged, failed not to give him due notice of what was expected from him in these particulars; but the Englishman disdained to pay such homage to the governor or council, belonging to the province of a republic, which was not expected even by his own sovereign. He therefore, in plain terms, refused to comply with the etiquette; and if attempts were made by the attendants to force him, he intimated that he should have recourse to his pistols. To prevent a contest of this kind, however, the governor wisely thought proper to send him word, that he might act as he pleased; and as impartial narrators of the transaction, we cannot help thinking, that the captain might have been more observant of the forms of the country, without derogating from his own dignity. Persons, invested with office, have a state to support, which is frequently kept up on their part, rather for the sake of order, than for the gratifications of their personal pride.

The repairs being finished, the Swallow sailed from Onrust on the 5th of September, after the captain had recruited his crew, by engaging some English seamen; and next day anchored off the Straights of Sunda. Here he took in wood and water, and sailed again on the 25th, with a favourable gale, which continued to waft them on their course, for the space of seven hundred leagues; and on the 23d of November they arrived in Table Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope.

Her

Here the captain experienced many civilities from the governor and principal persons of the settlement; and after an agreeable stay, proceeded on his voyage on the 20th of December. They arrived at St. Helena on the 20th of January, 1769, and in four days again set sail. Having touched at the island of Ascension, they found plenty of turtle on this uninhabited island; where it is customary to leave a letter in a bottle, containing the name and destination of any vessel that touches there; a ceremony with which Captain Carteret complied.

On the 20th of February they observed a ship standing towards them. This vessel had been seen far to the leeward, the preceding day; but had outailed the Swallow in the night. She proved to be a Frenchman, and sent her boat on board, with a young officer, who had it in charge, to endeavour to sift out the particulars of their voyage; at the same time that he took all imaginable pains to conceal what related to his own.

It was however afterwards discovered, that the ship, from which he had been sent, was commanded by M. Bougainville, which was likewise returning from a voyage round the world; and which, as has been previously mentioned, was the vessel that dogged Captain Wallis so closely through the Straights of Magellan.

The French captain had learned the name of the English ship, from the letter left at Ascension, and took this artful method, of attempting to inform himself of what particulars he wanted to know, relative to the expedition.

Captain Carteret, however, was so cautious and guarded in his conversation, that the French officer got no intelligence of any importance to

his nation, from this manœuvre; while his own secret was discovered by his party: for one of the boat's crew, that had brought him on board, divulged the whole matter to an English sailor, who fortunately was able to converse with him in his native tongue. Thus French policy for once was outwitted.

During the remainder of the voyage, few incidents happened, either memorable or interesting. They proceeded towards England with no particular impediments, and anticipated the pleasure of revisiting their native land, with the sincerest satisfaction. On the 27th of March, they came in sight of the Western Islands; and holding on their course, came to an anchor at Spithead, after having accomplished a very dangerous circumnavigation of the globe, in a vessel little calculated for such an enterprise, and with supplies the most inadequate. This reflects no small degree of lustre on the name of Carteret; and though his discoveries are not very brilliant, few could have been able to effect so much, with such slender provision for the purpose.

VOYAGE OF
M. BOUGAINVILLE,
ROUND THE GLOBE.

UNDERTAKEN BY THE ORDER OF THE FRENCH
KING.

THE French, animated with the same views of signalising themselves as the English, in the career of discovery, began to project voyages for this purpose; and for a while, forgetting the ambition of conquest, wished to make their power and their talents subservient to the general good of mankind.

Though France has not been able to equal our adventurous countrymen, who have penetrated to the remotest parts of the globe, on their native element, and explored its utmost recesses, yet they will derive no small share of glory from the labours of Bougainville. Why is it not in our power, to give the voyage of Peyrouse also! That unfortunate navigator, after surmounting many obstacles, and overcoming many dangers, by the efforts of a noble spirit, perhaps, after enlarging the bounds of knowledge, for which every nation would have been grateful, never returned with the news of his discoveries; and was probably *swallowed up in the deep, or wrecked on some desolate island, where the assiduous care of his*
M 2 count

countrymen has not been able to trace him. But shall we call his fate unhappy? He has left a name covered with honour and regret; and had he lived to see the dreadful scenes that have passed in his native land, he might have been hurried into the vortex, and lost the glory that now attends his shade. This small compliment to the memory of an ingenious man is due. There ought to be no enmity among the professors of science; and whoever extends their limits, or facilitates their acquisition, whether Frenchman or Briton, will be mutually viewed with complacency and regard.

To return from this digression. Bougainville is the only person of their nation that the French can compare with our immortal Cook; and though his talent for observation was not inferior, nor his resolution questionable, it will appear how little he was able to achieve, when his labours are estimated against those of our great navigator.

The French having begun to form a settlement on the Maulouine Islands or, as we call them, Falkland's Islands, in 1764, they were interrupted in their designs by the Spaniards, who, conceiving that those islands belonged to the continent of South America, and unwilling to have such powerful neighbours in the New World, near the scene of their greatest wealth, reclaimed the possession, that had been, as they supposed, usurped by the ambition of France. To prevent the fatal effects of a war, for the defence of a right, scarcely worth the expence of fitting out a single ship *of the line*, M. Bougainville was sent out to adjust matters with the colony, and to deliver up *the Maulouines* to Spain.

This

This distinguished officer sailed, on the 15th of November 1766, from the Port of Mindin, having under his command the frigate *La Boudeuse*, *La Esmeralda*, and *La Liebre*. Two Spanish frigates were to join him in the River Plata, to the commanding officer of which, he was to deliver up the settlement; and *L'Etoile* store ship, from France, was to meet him at Falkland's Island.

Scarcely had the *Boudeuse* spread her sails on the ocean, when she encountered such a violent storm of wind, as so considerably damaged her masts, that M. Bougainville was under the imperious necessity of returning to Brest, to refit, and to make some requisite alterations in the stowage of his ship; which he found ill calculated to withstand the fury of those seas through which he was to pass; and particularly so, for the navigation of the ocean round Cape Horn.

Having obtained the necessary repairs and alterations to his ship, M. Bougainville again set sail, on the 5th of December, having on board the *Prince of Nassau Seighen*, three gentlemen who went out as volunteers, eleven commissioned officers, warrant officers, seamen, soldiers, servants, and boys, to the number of two hundred.

The 17th they were in sight of the Salvages, a small flat island, rising at each extremity into a hillock: next day they saw the Isle of Palma, and that of Ferro on the 19th. By this time M. Bougainville was convinced of a great error in his reckoning, which he attributes to the rapidity of the currents, opposite the Strait of Gibraltar. Having corrected this by observation, he took a fresh departure; and arrived at Rio de la Plata, without experiencing any event worthy of being transmitted to posterity.

It was the 29th of January, in the evening, when they had the first sight of Rio de la Plata; and as the night was dark and tempestuous, they lay to, till next morning, when they had a view of the Mountains of Maldonado. Here the Spaniards have a small garrisoned town, in the vicinity of which some transparent stones are found; and at a small distance there is a gold mine, which has been worked for a few years past, though with no great success or emolument.

When the Boudeuse came to an anchor in the Bay of Montevideo, they found that the two Spanish frigates, which were to take possession of Falkland's Islands, had been lying there in expectation of their arrival for some weeks. Don Philip Ruio Puente, the principal in command, had been nominated governor of the islands about to be surrendered; and this gentleman accompanied M. Bougainville to Buenos Ayres, to settle with the governor general the mode of cession, that no disputes might arise on the spot. The Prince of Nassau Seighen, we are told, attended in this expedition.

This voyage they intended to perform in a schooner; but a contrary wind retarding their progress, they landed near the colony of San Sacramento, and traversed an immense extent of country, in which there were no roads, and the eye was their only guide. During this expedition, they slept in little hovels, constructed of leather, while the tigers howled around them. The manner in which M. Bougainville describes their passage, over the River St. Lucca, is singular enough. The river is wide and deep, and astonishingly rapid. When they arrived here, they were placed in a long, narrow canoe, one side of which

which was very disproportionably higher than the other; and a horse being fastened to each side of the vessel, the boatman holding their heads above water, drove them across the river with as much expedition as possible; and thus, with some difficulty, they stemmed the current.

M. Bougainville having settled the business which took him to Buenos Ayres, returned to Montevideo on the 16th of February, and in a few days was followed by the Spanish governor, Don Puente.

Necessaries, and stores of various kinds, being taken on board, they prepared to sail for Falkland's Islands. A small vessel was laden solely with cattle, for the use of the squadron. On the 28th of February they weighed; but the thickness of the fog, which prevented them from seeing land, and exposed them to the danger of running on the shore, impeded their progress; and soon after, the winds proving contrary, increased their delay. However, as the currents were favourable, M. Bougainville sent to inform the Spanish commander, that for several reasons, which he stated, it would be advisable to leave the coast, even should the winds continue adverse. The Spanish officer replied, that his pilot refused to weigh anchor, till the wind was fair and blew steady. On this Don Puente was acquainted that the *Boudeuse* would certainly quit her present station next morning, and either anchor more to the north, or ply to the windward, and wait for the Spanish ships, unless they should be unavoidably separated by the violence of the weather.

The small vessel, laden with cattle, by some means left the squadron; and it was afterwards
under

understood that she returned to Montevideo, after an absence of three weeks from that port.

The night, previous to the intended departure of the *Bondeuse* from the river, had been so tempestuous, that all the ships dragged their anchors; and in the morning the Spanish vessels were observed with their mainyards lowered, and their topmasts handed. M. Bougainville, however, made sail, and got out of the river before night, leaving the Spaniards still at anchor.

Variable and generally unfavourable weather attended the voyage of the French, till the 23d of March, on which day they anchored in the Bay of Falkland's Islands, and next day the Spanish vessels came in. The latter had suffered severely from the inclemency of the weather, and the cabin windows of Don Puente's ship having been broken by a heavy wave, admitted the sea in torrents. Much of the live stock, destined for the use of the colony, died on board.

On the 1st of April, M. Bougainville, in the name of his sovereign, surrendered the settlement to Don Puente, for the use of his Catholic majesty, when the Spanish colours were immediately hoisted, and a salute fired by the ships, and on the shore. M. Bougainville then read a letter, in which the French king granted leave to such of the inhabitants as chose to remain, to be under the dominion of Spain. A few accepted the offer; while others embarked with the garrison, and were conveyed by the Spanish ships to Montevideo.

The whole expence of this colony to the French, *from its first establishment*, was 603,000 livres; *which sum his Catholic majesty re-imburshed by taking to the stores of every kind.*

A short

A short history of this settlement may not be unacceptable. The French government having come to a resolution of colonizing Falkland's Islands*, M. Bougainville had, in the beginning of the year 1763, made an offer to establish the colony at his own expence, and that of his two near relations, M. D'Arboulín and M. de Nerville. His terms being accepted, M. Bougainville gave orders for the building and equipping of the Eagle of twenty guns, and the Sphinx of twelve; and as soon as these vessels had taken in such stores as were necessary for the voyage, and forming the settlement, he sailed from St. Malo on the 15th of September 1763, with several Acadian families, who had previously been engaged.

Having fixed on a place fit for the settlement, the commander immediately began to survey the interior, that he might ascertain the productions of the soil. He observes, that different species of water and land fowl, and fish, were the only animal supplies; and though there was no wood, he thinks this deficiency, as far as fuel is concerned, might be conveniently made up by an excellent kind of turf, which is every where found in abundance.

On the first arrival of these adventurers, it was astonishing to observe the flocks of birds that gathered round them, with evident curiosity unmingled with fear. So tame was the feathered race, and so unaccustomed to the superiority of man,

* These islands were observed by Sir Richard Hawkins, in 1591, when they were called Hawkins' Maiden Islands. At this period they appear to have been inhabited. Both the English and French have laid claim to them; but Spain has always resisted; and the object is certainly not worth a dispute—few colonies are!

that they frequently perched on those who stood still, and submitted to be taken by the hand. It is needless to add, that this social league did not long subsist: the birds soon learned, from experience, to be shy of the company that sought only to destroy them.

This colony consisted of no more than nineteen men, five women, and three children. No time was lost in erecting huts for their residence, which some covered with rushes, to protect them from the inclemency of the weather. They likewise built a small magazine, and a fort; and in the centre of the latter they erected an obelisk, under which they buried various coins, with the head of the French king, and *TIBI SERVIAT ULTIMA THULE* on one side, and on the other, a notification of the time when the settlement was made, and the names of the persons who had the principal direction of the expedition.

M. Bougainville, having superintended the original arrangements, promised the settlers that he would soon bring them more companions, and farther assistance; and, in confirmation of his promise, and the zeal with which he meant to serve them, he delegated his power to M. Nerville, his kinsman, who engaged to encourage the young colonists, by participating in every hardship and danger, to which they might be exposed, insulated as they were from the rest of mankind. This resolution proving perfectly satisfactory to the settlers, M. Bougainville weighed anchor on the 8th of April 1764, and sailed for Europe.

In the month of January following, he revisited Falkland's Islands, when he found the settlers in good health, and pleased with their situation. Having landed the stores, he proceeded to the Straigh

Straights of Magellan, to take in timber for the use of the colony, and to obtain young trees to plant on the islands. While engaged in this service, he fell in with the ships under the command of Commodore Byron, as has been related in that gentleman's voyage.

The colonists were now increased, by the new reinforcement, to one hundred and fifty persons. By this time the governor and the store-keeper were lodged in comfortable houses, built of stone; and the rest of the colonists, considering their situation, had commodious huts. With the wood brought from the Straights of Magellan, they built several vessels, adapted to the navigation of the coast; and several kinds of grain, imported from Europe, thrived very well, and promised an abundant increase.

In the year 1766, Captain Macbride, in the *Jason* frigate, visited the French settlement, and, to use the words of M. Bougainville, "pretended that those parts belonged to his Britannic Majesty, threatened to land by force, if he should be denied that liberty, visited the governor, and sailed away the same day."

As the claims of Spain, however, were allowed valid to the possession of these islands, against the French, we shall take a brief historical retrospect of their discovery, which will best demonstrate who had the prior right to the territory.

These islands were unquestionably seen by Cavendish, in 1592. Captain Dampier had also a sight of them; and Sir Richard Hawkins falling in with them, named them, as has been already mentioned, *Hawkins' Maiden Land*. Sebald de Wert soon after gave them the appellation of *Sebald's Isles*, and under this name they are laid
down

down in the Dutch charts. Our countryman, Strong, visited them in 1689, and called them Falkland's Islands; and it appears, that the first Frenchman who touched there, was Gouin, which was not till 1700. From this state of the evidence, it is clear that the English were the first visitors, and the French the last. As to the Spaniards, we do not find that they ever touched there; and their claim to the territory could rest only on the general occupation of the coast, or on the papal bull, which so liberally gave them the new world, on its original discovery.

As these islands have been the subject of repeated disputes, M. Neville's account of them, who resided on the settlement three years, may be interesting to our readers. This gentleman observes, that "on the first arrival of the French, there was not an object struck their view, that could induce them to take up their residence on such an inhospitable shore, except the commodiousness of the port. The land was in many places broken in upon by the sea; the mountains made the most desolate appearance; the fields looked dreary, for want of houses and inhabitants; an universal silence reigned, except when the screams of birds, or the howling of some sea monster, disturbed the solemn stillness of the scene; while a dull and gloomy sameness of appearance, added horror to the whole picture.

"Though this was no tempting view, the adventurers knew that it might be improved by time and diligence, and that the labour of the industrious would not be in vain. As a counterbalance for present inconveniencies, they reflected, that the climate possessed that kind of temperature, likely to be friendly to health and longevity; and was therefore

therefore preferable to the noxious air of those more fertile regions, where the sickening inhabitants sink under the scorching heat of a vertical sun. The island produced a number of antiscorbutic vegetables; and the fish and birds were exquisitely delicious. There were amphibious animals in immense numbers; but none of the fierce or poisonous kind. Cascades and rivulets descended from the mountains; meadows, of an immense extent, promised constant pasturage for any number of flocks and herds, which might feed in security, undisturbed by any tyrant lord of the soil. These advantages combined, in the opinion of the French, were sufficient to recompense them for the dangers and fatigues of such a distant voyage, and were a pledge for the full reward of their future exertions.

"The situation of the Maulouine Islands, is between 51 and 52 deg. 30 min. south latitude, and 65 deg. 30 min. west longitude from Paris. From the entrance of the Straights of Magellan, and from the coast of Patagonia, their distance is about two hundred and fifty miles.

"The harbours are capacious and well sheltered, and fresh water is easily obtained. The tides do not rise and fall at any stated time, but depend on the force with which the wind agitates the waves of the sea: it was however, observed, that just before high water, the sea rises and subsides with a quick motion, thrice within the space of fifteen minutes; and that, at the full of the moon, the equinoxes, and solstices, this motion is greater than at other periods.

"The winds from the north and west are most prevalent, but they vary as in other countries. It is, however, remarkable, that these

winds rise with the sun, increase as he advances to the meridian, and blow with most violence about noon; decrease again with the declining sun, and totally cease about his setting. The tide also frequently adds to their violence, and not unfrequently changes their direction. The quarter from whence they blow in winter, is a certain indication of the weather. When they come from the south, hoar-frost, hail, and snow are the certain consequences; and the weather is wet and foggy, when they come from the opposite point.

“ The snow that falls is but small in quantity, and commonly disappears in a day or two, except what lodges on the summits of the high mountains, where it frequently remains two months. The running streams are never frozen, and the lakes and stagnant pools seldom are covered with ice, capable of bearing a man, for two days successively. In the spring and autumn, there are light hoar-frosts, which being converted to a kind of dew, by the warmth of the sun, are rather nourishing than injurious to vegetable nature.

“ Thunder and lightning are rare; nor is the climate hot or cold in any extraordinary degree. Throughout the whole year, the stars generally shine with great brilliance; and, on the whole, the climate was found favourable to the human constitution.

“ The depth of the soil in the valleys is more than sufficient for the purposes of plowing; but before the settlers could proceed to cultivation, they were obliged to extract the roots of the *plants*, which every where intersected and matted the ground, to the depth of a foot. These roots.

roots, when dried and burned, proved a rich manure.

“ The sea coasts are, in most places, composed of stones, well adapted for building ; and there are also beds of a hard fine-grained stone, in several parts of the island, besides veins of other kinds of stones, interspersed with particles of talc. The settlers also found some stones, capable of giving an edge to their instruments.

“ The island likewise yielded earth, capable of being manufactured into bricks and potter's ware, and plenty of sand and clay. In many parts of the country were marshes, which produced a sharp-pointed rush; and the remains of their roots, which were continually decaying, formed the turf used as fuel, which burned clear, without any offensive smell.

“ They observed a plant of the gramen kind, whose stalk contained a saccharine juice, much relished by cattle. This plant flourishes most in the small islands that line the sea-coast, where it bends till the stalks unite and form an arch, under which the sea-lions and seals occasionally retreat. In several excursions, the adventurers found these natural-built sheds an agreeable defence against the inclemency of the weather; and the more so, as the dry leaves, which had fallen off, composed a kind of rustic couch. The above-mentioned plant is the most luxuriant that grows on the island; for though there are several shrubs, they are small and stunted in their appearance.

“ A shrubby plant was discovered, which having been tasted, was thought fit for the brewing of beer. Fortunately, the colonists were supplied with malt and molasses, to which they added the beer plant, and thus produced a very salubrious
N 2 and

and palatable beverage, of sovereign efficacy in the scurvy. This plant was likewise infused in water, and used as a bath with the best effects. When pressed, it yielded a mealy substance of a fragrant smell, and of a glutinous nature. The leaves were small, of a clear bright green, and dentated *.

" Other vegetables were found in great abundance, extremely useful as antiscorbutics; particularly water-creffes, sorrel, wild parsley, and a species of celery. A kind of resinous gum plant is indigenous here, which seems to be entirely unknown in other parts of the globe. It has neither leaves, branches, nor any apparent stalk, and, except in colour, which is that of a bright green, it more resembles a lump of earth, rising from the common surface of the ground, than a vegetable production. It grows to about the height of eighteen inches, and its breadth is from two feet to two yards, and upwards. The smaller plants are hemispherical, and their circumference is regular; but when they acquire their full size, they terminate at the extremities in irregular bunches and cavities. On different parts of the surface, are drops of a yellow tenacious matter, about the size of a pea, which have the smell of turpentine. M. Bougainville, having cut this curious plant close to the ground, found that it had a short stalk, from which arose an immense number of shoots, consisting of stellated leaves, varying one within the other. The outside of these shoots are green, and the insides white; and they contain a viscid milky juice, which like-

* We lament, that the specific character and genus of this valuable plant are not given.

wife resides in the roots and stalks. The roots extending horizontally, frequently produce fresh shoots at a distance, so that there is no instance of one of these plants being found alone. The resin of this plant proved a good vulnerary. It would not dissolve in spirits. Some of the seeds were brought to Europe, in order to attempt the cultivation of so singular a curiosity in the vegetable world.

“The island, on which the colonists had taken up their residence, is divided from east to west by a chain of mountains, to the south of which they found another plant, not unlike that just described, which, however, did not yield any resin, but produced beautiful yellow flowers. Its texture was less firm, nor was its green of the same tinge: in other respects, it bore a close resemblance to the former.”

On the hills was likewise found a large species of maidenhair, the leaves of which were ensiform. The higher situations also abounded with a variety of plants, which had the appearance of holding a middle station between stones and vegetables. It was apprehended, that these might have been successfully used in dyeing.

Flowers are produced in a considerable variety; but few were remarkable for their smell. Of fruits, they observed one about the size of a pea, which received the appellation of the lucet, from its resemblance to the North American fruit of that name. When ripe, it is reddish, and smells most agreeably, like the blossoms of the orange tree. Its branches creep along the ground, producing dark green leaves, of a lucid appearance. *These leaves, infused into milk, give it a delicious taste. Besides the lucet, they found only one*

other fruit, which grows on long branches, like the strawberry, and has the appearance of the mulberry, which name it received.

Few marine plants were observed, which could be converted to any use; but all the coast was lined with sea-weeds, which assisted in breaking the force of the waves in stormy weather. Many species of corallines, of the most beautiful variety of colours, and a great number of curious shells and sponges were washed on shore, by the force of the tides. Among the shells were the smooth and striated muscle, scallops, whelks, and a bivalve of singular construction, named *la poulette*.

Sea-lions and seals are the only amphibious animals found on the coast; but there are great varieties of fish, almost entirely unknown in Europe. The bones of animals, of vast magnitude, were sometimes found far inland; from whence it is probable, that the soil has increased, or the sea has been contracted.


The only quadruped found on these islands, is an animal called the wolf-fox, a kind of intermediate breed between those two quadrupeds. The tail of this creature, is more bushy than that of the wolf; and it lives under ground, in a kennel it prepares for itself. At one season of the year, the wolf-fox appears as if almost starved; that he fasts himself, is not very probable, and there is no apparent diminution of his usual food, which is wild-fowl. He is about the size of the shepherd's dog, and barks very much like one, though not so loud. In hunting for his prey, he always travels in a direct line, so that, when our adventurers first discovered his track, they supposed the island was inhabited.

Among the land and sea fowls, of the rapacious kind, which are produced here in immense numbers, are falcons, hawks, eagles, and owls. The eggs and young birds are the common food of the wolf-fox, while the smaller fish are destroyed by the whales, seals, and rapacious birds that are constantly on the wing. Thus mutual ravage reigns; and the weak, as is the case throughout all nature, become the victims of the strong.

The Maulouie swan is perfectly white, except the feet and neck; the former are flesh-coloured, and the latter is as black as jet. Of wild geese there are four species, only one of which feeds on dry ground. The legs and neck of this species are uncommonly long; it walks and flies with great facility, and does not cackle like the common goose. It seldom lays more than six eggs, and the male is distinctly marked by his colours. The flavour of these birds is agreeable, and they are found to be very nourishing. Exclusive of those which were hatched on the island, large flocks arrived in autumn with a westerly wind, which being caught in great abundance, formed a principal part of the settlers supplies for a season.

The other three species of geese are less beautiful than the preceding, and as they subsist entirely on fish, the flesh acquires a disagreeable flavour, so as to be almost unfit for use. Their down, however, is uncommonly fine, and in countries, where luxuries are known, would be highly valuable.

The rivers and ponds abound in two species of wild-ducks, and the same number of teal, which *in their habitudes*, and in other respects, resemble *those of Europe*. The chief distinctions are the *colour and size*.



This island likewise produces a bird, which M. Bougainville calls the diver. Of these divers are two kinds. That which is most numerous, has brown feathers, with no other variation, than that the plumage on the belly is somewhat lighter than on the back. The belly of the other species is white, and the back grey. The eyes of these birds have the lustre of rubies, and are encircled with a ring of white feathers. The female hatches only two at a time, which she carries on her back, nor commits them to the water, till they have acquired their feathers. The toes of these birds are quite thin, and being round towards the claw, and green, are not unlike the leaves of some plants. Their feet are not webbed, as is usual among marine fowls; but the toes have a strong membrane on each side.

The colonists gave the name of saw-bills, to two kinds of birds, which bore a great similitude to each other, the chief difference consisting in their size, and a few variations of colour. The plumage of these birds is soft as silk, and very close. Their feet are webbed and flesh-coloured, and their bills sharp pointed. They are gregarious, and lay their eggs on the rocks. The settlers not only drew subsistence from the ovarious productions of these birds, but also from the flesh; killing numbers of them at a time. So little timidity did they shew, that they suffered themselves to be knocked down with a stick.

A bird, called by the Spaniards quebrantahueffos, which measures more than two yards, from the extremity of its wings, commits great *depredations* among the saw-bills; and they, in *their turn*, prey on fish, of which they consume *vast quantities*. This large, rapacious bird has a
long

g bill, with two hollow tubes of the same substance as the beak, and webbed feet. Some mariners have given this bird the name of the albatross, as it differs considerably from the common bird of that appellation; nor is it possible, from the imperfect description of M. Bougainville, to assign its particular species.

Gulls and mews, of the most beautiful plumage, served to direct our colonists, to the proper season and situation for catching pilchards. These birds fly in flocks, close over the surface of the water, and when they see a pilchard, dart on it and swallow it; and when they have got a fresh one, they disgorge that which they had previously devoured. When the pilchards are not in season, they feed on various other kinds of small fish.

The eggs of these birds are deposited, in abundance, on the leaves of a plant near the marshes, and they proved to be good eating.

Three kinds of penguins breed on the island; one is a remarkably grand and elegant bird; the belly is a bright white; the back a kind of blue, and it has a beautiful ruff, of a vivid yellow, which, descending towards the belly, separates the white feathers from the blue ones.

One of these birds, being caught with an intention of carrying it to France, soon grew so tame, that it followed its feeder about the deck it was supplied with bread, fish, and flesh; but in spite of all the care that could be taken for its preservation, it gradually wasted away, and last died.

The second kind of penguins, is what has been usually described by voyagers. The third are gregarious, laying their eggs in the high

of the rocks. They are much smaller than the others, and were called hopping penguins, from their style of moving. They have a circle of gold-coloured feathers round their eyes, and a tuft of the same colour, which they erect when they are displeased. This bird has a very cheerful look: its general colour is a deep yellow.

At different times in the year, three kinds of peterels resorted hither. One species was quite white, with a red bill, and not unlike a pigeon: the second species is larger; and the third less. The two last have white feathers on the belly, while every other part is black.

Eagles were also seen, of three different species; two of which are black, with white and yellow feet; and the other is a dusky brown. All these subsist on snipes and other small birds, of which they destroy amazing numbers. Egrets, a species of heron, were frequently observed on the island: they make a disagreeable noise, not much unlike the barking of a dog. They seldom leave their retreats, to feed, till towards the evening.

Two kinds of thrushes annually resorted to this island, about autumn; one was of the same colour as the European thrush; the other was yellow, except on the belly, which was spotted with black. A third species of thrush was a native of the place: its feet were white; the bill red; and the feathers black and white. This bird whistled a kind of note, which the French found it easy to imitate; and, by that means, came near enough to catch them without much trouble.

Great numbers of curlews, of the European kind, were constantly seen in summer; and snipes were most abundant. These were easily shot, as they always fly in a regular direction. During the

the season of incubation, they ascend to a great height, and having soared some time in the air, they drop at once into their nests, which are built on the ground, where it is most free from grass or other herbage. Towards the decline of the year, the snipes were found to be delicious eating.

Of the fish taken in great plenty on the coasts of the Maulouine Islands, one species was named the mullet, from the great likeness it bears to the European fish of that name. The colonists dried many of them, full three feet long. The seals are very fond of these fish; but, by a natural instinct, they are taught to avoid their voracious pursuers, by sheltering themselves in holes among slimy ground, near the banks of rivers, where, their resorts being discovered, they are easily taken.

A fish, called the gardeau, about a foot long, and another named the sardine, were among the marine productions that were most esteemed. Some eels were found in the cavities of rocks, accessible by the tide.

It would be almost endless to enumerate every species of fish found on this prolific coast; and from what has already been mentioned in regard to the fish and fowls of this climate, it will appear, that nature has been sufficiently bountiful, and that the arts of cultivation might have made Falkland's Islands a situation to be desired, as far as the comforts of animal life were concerned. But though the means of subsistence is one great object in settling a new country, *other things* should be taken into the scale, *among people used to civilization; and to the sweets of society.* Merely to live, or to live well.

in the estimation of such will be too little. With all the luxuries and charms of Otaheite, few would wish to leave their native land and connections, to settle there for ever. The love of one's own country is a powerful principle of action; and happy is it for mankind that it is so deeply and universally impressed on the heart: it is the source of many virtues, and the test of generous feelings, which those can never know, by whom climate is disregarded, and who boast their indifference to local situation.

Few of our readers are ignorant of the dispute between Spain and Great Britain relative to Falkland's Islands, or of the manner in which it was terminated. It happened in that case, as it generally does in similar concerns, where few are competent to judge, that, while some were extolling the country as an earthly paradise, others represented it as a desolate and barren spot, not worth the slightest contention. Truth generally lies between extremes. The account we have just given will indicate a soil not barren; yet it produced nothing but what might be found in any country, with less labour and less risk. It had neither mines nor metals to stimulate adventure; and unless it could have been converted into a depôt for a contraband trade with the Spaniards, it was certainly of little value to any other nation.

After waiting till the 2d of June 1767, in expectation of being joined by the *Etoile* store ship, which did not arrive, M. Bougainville began to reflect, that as his vessel was not capable of containing more than six months stores, and that he had only enough for two on board, it would be an act of inexcusable rashness to attempt crossing the great Pacific Ocean alone. He, therefore
resolv

resolved to steer for Rio Janeiro, at which place he had appointed the *Etoile* to rendezvous, in case any unforeseen accident should prevent her reaching Falkland's Islands before his departure thence.

During this navigation, M. Bougainville had favourable weather. On the 20th of June he came in sight of the mountains of Brasil, and next day approached the entrance of Rio Janeiro. A number of fishing boats being observed near the shore, M. Bougainville hoisted Portuguese colours, and ordered a cannon to be fired; on which a boat put off to the ship, and a pilot was engaged to conduct her into port.

The coast of this country is broken by a number of small hills, which give an agreeable diversity to the prospect. The land is rather mountainous, and well clothed with woods.

The *Boudeuse* having arrived off Santa Cruz, a Portuguese officer was dispatched to enquire into her destination; on which the captain sent one of his lieutenants to acquaint the viceroy of the Brasils with his motives for touching there, and to demand whether the compliment would be returned, if he should salute the fort. The governor haughtily replied, that when a person bowed to another whom he might casually meet in the street, he was not previously certain that his obeisance would be returned; and that if M. Bougainville should fire his guns by way of salute, it would then be a matter of consideration how to act. In consequence of this insolent message, the French commander withheld his salute, and the matter passed over in silence.

Meanwhile, a canoe was dispatched from the captain of the *Etoile*, to inform M. Bougainville

Vol. V.

of the safe arrival of that vessel, which now lay in the port. The commander, M. de la Giraudais, farther informed him, that instead of leaving France in the month of December, as was intended, various accidents had conspired to detain him two months beyond that time; and when he had been three months at sea, his rigging was found so much damaged, and his vessel admitted so much water, that he was obliged to make the harbour of Montevideo, whence he sailed for his present station, where he had only arrived a few days before the Boudeuse.

The Etoile had salt provisions on board, sufficient to supply both ships for nearly eighteen months; but as her stock of bread was adequate only to the consumption of seven weeks, M. Bougainville resolved to proceed to Rio de la Plata, to take in a stock; as neither bread, biscuit, nor flour could be obtained where they lay.

Soon after securing the ship, M. Bougainville, and his principal officers, paid a visit to the viceroy, which was returned on board within three days. The viceroy was solicited, and gave permission for the purchase of a sloop, which the adventurers thought might be serviceable during the long voyage which they had in contemplation. It seems, however, that the chaplain of the Etoile had been murdered some days before the arrival of the Boudeuse, under the very windows of the viceroy's palace; and though a promise was made that the perpetrators of this horrid crime should be searched for, in order to punish them, the viceroy appeared very remiss in the execution of *this necessary act of justice*. Hence the opinion *the French conceived of him was not the most favourable*. Nevertheless he behaved with great
apparer

apparent politeness to the French officers for several days after this visit; and even signified his intention of entertaining them with an elegant collation among the beautiful orange and jessamine bowers, which adorned the banks of the river; and he actually gave orders that a box at the opera should be assigned for their reception, where they saw a company of mulattoes perform some of the best pieces of Metastasio, while the compositions of the first geniuses of Italy were executed by an orchestra, under the direction of a hump-backed priest in canonicals.

At this time the *Morning Star*, a French ship, and a Spaniard, named the *Diligent*, lay in the road. The Spanish captain had been detained, by the most artful conduct, no less than eight months, during all which time he had not been able to procure the articles necessary for the repair of his vessel, and without which it was impossible for her to proceed on her voyage. In this dilemma, he applied to M. Bougainville for the assistance of his carpenters and caulkers, who were immediately sent from both the ships under his command.

The Spaniards were surprised at the complaisance with which the gentlemen on board the French vessels were treated by this supercilious governor, and intimated that they must not long expect such a share of his favourable attention. This prediction was soon after verified: for though he had permitted M. Bougainville to purchase a sloop, as has been mentioned, his excellency thought proper to forbid the delivery of it; and notwithstanding they had contracted with him in person for some timber from the royal dock yards, he afterwards flew from the stipula-
tio

tions he had voluntarily entered into. He even carried his rudeness so far as to refuse M. Bougainville, and the gentlemen of his ship, permission to lodge in a house they had rented near the town, while their vessel was under repair.

Convinced of the chicanery of the viceroy, M. Bougainville resolved to wait on him, with proper remonstrances on the line of conduct he had pursued; but his excellency refused to see him, and even commanded him to leave the house. M. Bougainville refused to comply, and kept his seat some time after the guards had been called to force him into a compliance. Not long after this transaction, an additional number of guns were planted round the palace, and the viceroy commanded, that every Frenchman, found in the street after sun-set, should be taken into custody.

Banishment and a prison were the fate of two of the Portuguese officers, for having behaved with civility to M. Bougainville; and the French, apprehending that the tyrannical disposition of Count d'Acunha, the viceroy, might impel him to farther acts of severity and aggression, it was determined to quit the road. The captain of a Spanish man of war politely supplied the commodore with some timber for the immediate repairs of his vessel, and an inhabitant of Rio Janeiro furnished some other necessary articles.

As M. Bougainville has communicated several interesting particulars relative to this splendid appendage to the crown of Portugal, not to be met with in other voyages, we shall subjoin them.

"The mines," says our author, "which lie *nearest to Rio Janeiro*, are one hundred and *twenty miles* distant, and are denominated the *General Mines*. The King of Portugal, who receive

ceives a fifth share of their produce, reaps annually from them about one hundred and twelve *arobas* of gold.

“ There are also mines at Sero Frio, Sabarra, and Rio des Mortes, which are under the direction of the superintendants of the general mines. Near Sero Frio is a river, the stream of which being diverted from its usual channels, diamonds, topazes, chrysolites, and other jewels are found among the pebbles; nor are any diamonds brought from the *Brafs*, except what are found in this manner, and in this river.

“ The precious stones, thus found, are deemed the property of the owners of the mines : but his Portuguese Majesty has appointed a surveyor, to whom they must account with the utmost exactness for what diamonds are found. These the surveyor puts into a casket with three locks, the viceroy keeping one of the keys, the *pro-vador de hazienda reale* the second, and the surveyor the third. This casket, and the keys with which it is locked, are then put into a second casket, on which these gentlemen affix their seals, and this again is placed in a third, which the viceroy solely seals, and then ships the treasure for Portugal, where the coffers are opened in the presence of his Most Faithful Majesty ; who having selected such jewels as he fancies, the owners of the mines are paid for them at a rate stipulated by previous agreement.

“ The number of slaves employed in searching for diamonds is about eight hundred ; and for the daily labour of each of these, the king receives a Spanish dollar from the proprietors of the mines. Though it is extremely dangerous to

secrete a diamond, the temptation is often too strong to be resisted. When a person is detected in this illicit trade, if he is in affluent circumstances, he is sentenced to make restitution, and twice the value besides, to suffer a year's imprisonment, and then to be banished to Africa for life.

" But should the offender be indigent, instead of allowing this to extenuate his guilt, he is generally doomed to suffer capital punishment.

" In every district of the Brasils, where gold is found, a place is established where it must be carried, and the king's duty paid: the rest is then sent to Rio Janeiro, where it is formed into wedges, and in that state returned to the owners. The wedges being numbered, are stamped with the royal arms. They are likewise assayed, and the quantity of alloy is expressed on every wedge, to facilitate the coinage.

" At Praybuna, about ninety miles from Rio Janeiro, resides an officer for registering the ingots belonging to private persons; and, as this place must of necessity be passed in the road to and from the mines, two military officers are stationed here, having fifty men under their command, whose business it is strictly to examine passengers, and thus to prevent any illicit trade. At this place too, exclusive of the tax to the king, men and boats are assessed with a toll of a rial and a half each, which is equally divided between his Portuguese Majesty and the officers and soldiers.

" The gold belonging to private persons being *registered here*, is then carried to Rio Janeiro, *where the proprietors are paid in demi-doubloons,*
worth

worth about thirty shillings sterling; but there is a drawback to the king of about four shillings and sixpence on each.

"The mint at Rio Janeiro is a very noble building, admirably adapted for the purpose of an extensive coinage, which is performed with the utmost expedition; and dispatch is indeed very necessary, as two Portuguese fleets annually arrive about the time that the gold is brought from the mines.

"One of these fleets comes from Lisbon, the other from Oporto. They import into the Brasils coarse cloth, provisions, and luxuries, which occasions Rio Janeiro to be a place of considerable trade. All commodities, on being landed here, are charged with ten per centage duty to the king; and soon after the earthquake at Lisbon in 1755, to assist in repairing that catastrophe, two and a half more were added, which have never been withdrawn.

"In the districts of Pratacon and Quiaba it is said there are diamond mines, but these are not allowed to be worked, lest the market should be overstocked; for it is evident, that to increase the quantity of diamonds would diminish the value.

"The expence of the government of Brasil, civil and military, and of working and superintending the mines, amounts to about one hundred and forty-five thousand pounds annually, and the revenues arising from this valuable settlement cannot be estimated at less than half a million."

M. Bougainville, disgusted with the behaviour of the viceroy, resolved to proceed; and, accordingly, left Rio Janeiro on the 15th of July 1767, in company with the *Etoile*. On the 19th th
Bow

Boudense suffered some damage in her rigging from the violence of the wind; but the loss was soon repaired.

It should be observed, that on board M. Bougainville's ship was a professor of astronomy, who made the expedition with a view of discovering the longitude at sea; and as an eclipse of the sun was to happen on the 25th, great hopes were entertained that an opportunity would thereby be obtained of making the long-wished-for discovery. It happened, however, that these sanguine expectations were entirely frustrated by the intervention of clouds, which obscured the face of the sun almost during the whole continuance of the eclipse. To this disappointment the French astronomer was, probably, indebted for a prolonged enjoyment of the pleasing visions his fancy had formed; for though the deepest mathematicians have long employed their studies to discover this grand desideratum in navigation, and probably will continue to do so till the end of time, we consider the modes now practised of ascertaining the longitude as nearly as perfect as the ingenuity of man will ever be able to discover; and as being equal to every practical use.

On the morning of the 28th, our voyagers had sight of the Castilles, at the distance of more than ten leagues. They saw the entrance of a bay, where it was supposed the Spaniards had erected a fort. The ships entered the Rio de la Plata, on the following day, and had a view of the Maldonados. In the evening of the 31st, they came to an anchor in the Bay of Montevideo.

The vessels being secured, the governor sent a gentleman on board M. Bougainville's ship, who acquainted him that most of the jesuits in those
region

regions had been lately seized, and their estates confiscated, in consequence of an order from the court of Spain; and it seemed that these victims of superior power had not attempted resistance, but bore their misfortunes with patient fortitude. No less than forty of them had been carried away in the vessels which brought the orders for their disgrace.

As it was unsafe to leave their present station till after the equinox, M. Bougainville's first care was to build an hospital for the sick, and to take lodgings at Montevideo.

This being done, he repaired to Buenos Ayres, in order to expedite the supplies he wanted, for which he was to pay the same price as the King of Spain usually gave for the same commodities. When M. Bougainville arrived here, it is natural to suppose, that the conduct of the Viceroy of Rio Janeiro was the subject of conversation with the Spanish governor; who, having felt himself aggrieved by the treatment shewn to his nation, had transmitted a narrative of this haughty officer's proceedings to the court of Spain. Don Francisco Buccarelli, the governor general of Buenos Ayres, shewed himself so well disposed to assist M. Bougainville with the supplies desired, that, in less than three weeks, two vessels sailed for Montevideo, laden with flour and biscuits, for the use of the French ships, by which conveyance M. Bougainville returned, leaving an inferior officer to superintend the remaining provision business.

Having nearly completed their stores, they began to think of departing soon, when an accident happened, that unexpectedly detained them some weeks. A Spanish register ship being at anchor

near them, during a violent hurricane in the night, broke from her moorings, and driving against the Etoile, carried away part of the head of that vessel, and snapped her bowsprit level with the deck. This unfortunate event, rendered it absolutely necessary for her to undergo a complete repair; but as there was not a sufficient supply of timber at Montevideo, Don Buccarelli granted his permission for her proceeding farther up the river, to Encenada de Baragan, in the bay of which she was put in a proper condition for sea by the 21st of October, and began to take in the necessary provisions.

In the road of Encenada, M. Bougainville found a frigate and several merchants ships bound to Europe; besides two vessels freighted with ammunition and provisions for the settlement at Falkland's Islands, after landing which, they were to proceed to the South Seas, to take on board the jesuits of Chili and Peru. Two Xebecks likewise lay there laden with presents from his Catholic Majesty to the inhabitants of Terro del Fuego, in return for their humane attention to the crew of the Conception, which had been wrecked on their coast about two years before. This gratitude in the court of Spain, was no less honourable than politic; and it is with pleasure we remark any instance of humanity in those who are, perhaps injuriously, reputed to be savages; or of mild condescension in such as boast their pre-eminence in the arts of civilization.

M. Bougainville observes, that the inhabitants, on the banks of the Encenada de Baragan, live *in mean huts*, constructed of mud and rushes, and covered with leather, in a soil so steril, as scarcely to produce the simple necessities of life.

Abor

About this time two Spanish register ships arrived in great distress; and M. Bougainville had the happiness, in return for the civilities received from their countrymen, of contributing to their relief, and of bringing them safely to an anchor at Montevideo. From the Encenada, the Etoile sailed on the 30th of October, and next day was followed by the Boudeuse, having on board provisions for ten months. In their passage to Montevideo, they had the misfortune to lose three men, by one of the boats running foul of the ship in wearing: it was with difficulty that two others were saved, and the boat recovered.

Soon after they set sail, a storm overtook them, in which they lost much of their live stock, and received other trivial damage.

For some time they had variable winds and violent currents, which drove the ship into 45 deg. south latitude. At length they made Cape Virgin, so named by Sir John Narborough.

In this passage they saw many albatrosses, petrels, penguins, seals, and whales. The skins of the latter had a singular appearance of being covered with small worms, similar to those which are found at the bottoms of vessels that lie long in port.

In a short time after they descried Cape Virgin, they made Terra del Fuego, and for many successive days experienced nothing but contrary winds and storms. A breeze, partially favourable, springing up on the 3d of December, they attempted to reach the mouth of the Straights; but a calm and thick fog succeeding, they were induced, for security, to steer to the westward.

The following day they stood in for land again, with a favourable wind; but the rain and hazy
weather

weather obscuring the coast, they were obliged to keep the sea. An interval of clear weather gave them hopes once more of being able to enter the Straights; but the wind soon changing, and the fog returning, they were under the necessity of lying between the main land and the two shores of Terra del Fuego.

Same day the forefail of the Boudeuse was split by the fury of the winds; and as they were in no more than twenty fathoms water, they determined to scud under bare poles, lest they should run foul of some breakers in the vicinity of Cape Virgin.

A number of fruitless attempts were made to enter the Straights. Sometimes they thought themselves certain of effecting this, and then again were disappointed. At one time the winds were adverse; at another, the currents wasted them out of their course.

On the 7th they advanced so far as to have sight of Cape Orange, which forms the first narrow pass in the Straights. This pass M. Bougainville denominates a gut. It is full forty miles from Cape Virgin to this gut, and for this space the Straights are of different breadths; but seldom less than from five to seven leagues. On the north coast the land is lofty, and presents a regular appearance, as far as Cape Possession, in the bays of which are several dangerous rocks, to which Sir John Narborough has given the whimsical name of the Ass's Ears.

When the French had entered this passage with a fresh gale and all their sails set, the tide ran *with such force* against them, that they were *driven backwards* instead of advancing. In the *evening*, however, they reached Possession Bay, an

and next day, by the favour of a strong breeze, they stemmed the tide, and tacked through the first narrow entrance of the gut with the wind against them.

During the preceding night they had observed fires along the shore, and on the morning of the 8th, they discovered a white flag, which the Patagonians had erected on a rising ground, on which the white flag was ordered to be hoisted at the mast head of each vessel. The flag which the Patagonians displayed had been given them by the commander of the *Etoile*, when that ship lay there in June 1766; and it was a proof of the care of the natives, that they had preserved it, and of their judgment and observation, in knowing how to use it upon this occasion.

As the ships were sailing along, a number of men, clothed in skins, were observed on Terra del Fuego, who tried to keep pace with the ships, by running along the shore, frequently beckoning with their hands, as if they wished the voyagers to stop.

According to the Spanish accounts, the inhabitants of that part of Terra del Fuego are much less ferocious in their manners than most other Indians. At the time M. Bougainville sailed from Rio de la Plata, a Spanish ship was on the point of proceeding with a cargo of priests, to convert these people to Christianity.

The *Boudeuse* having come to an anchor in Boucault's Bay, several officers from each vessel, well armed, embarked in boats, and landed at the bottom of the bay.

The rowers were ordered to remain and keep the boats afloat. No sooner were these gentlemen landed, than a few of the natives came riding.

ing up to them full speed; and having advanced within fifty yards, they dismounted and came forwards, pronouncing the word Shawa.

The Indians having come up close, extended their arms and shook hands with the French, embracing them, and repeating shawa, which word Bougainville and his officers returned. The Patagonians, in general, seemed to be much pleased with the society of their new friends; but it was observable, that some of them betrayed symptoms of fear in their countenances. This sensation, however, was soon removed, by the hospitality of the officers, who, sending to the ship for refreshments, entertained the Indians, and found them grateful for whatever was presented to them.

More of the natives soon approached, bringing with them some children. They expressed no surprise at the sight of their visitants, and seemed not unacquainted with the use of fire arms, as appeared by their imitating the report of a gun, probably to display their knowledge.

The good nature of these people was manifested in all their actions. Some of the French gentlemen being engaged in collecting plants, the Patagonians no sooner observed what kinds they seemed to notice, than they immediately began to pull up and bring them the same sorts.

One of them, observing an officer botanizing, ran up to him, and pointing to his eye, which had received an injury, intimated his wish, that some herb might be shewn him which would cure his malady. This was justly deemed a conclusive argument, that they were not ignorant of the medical powers of plants.

M. Bougainville received from them a number of the skins of the guanico and other beasts, in exchange

change for a few trinkets on which they seemed to set a high value. Some of the officers being dressed in scarlet, the natives advanced and stroked them with their hands, apparently delighted with every thing of that colour. They also made signs for some tobacco, and as often as they were indulged, cried out *shaw*, in a loud and unpleasant tone of voice.

A small quantity of brandy being presented to each of the Patagonians, they no sooner drank it than they struck their hands against their throats, and blew with their mouths, so as to produce a kind of trembling sound, at the conclusion of which their lips quivered in a singular manner. As the evening came on, the French retired to their ships, on which the amicable natives expressed great concern, and by signs intimated that they wished for their longer stay; on which they were given to understand that their visitors would return next day.

They now accompanied M. Bougainville and his party to the boats; while one of them sung; and on reaching the shore, they went into the water as far as the boats; and tempted by the sight of several articles that pleased them, they shewed a disposition to engross them, but made no resistance, when they found that they were not to be parted with.

As the boats were rowing off, many more of the natives were observed galloping down to the beach, and their favourite word *shaw* was reiterated till the boats were out of hearing. M. Bougainville says, that among these Indians were some that were seen by the crew of the *Etoile*, in 1766. They are represented as being well

well made, and of the same stature as mentioned by other voyagers. The size of their limbs, the largeness of their heads, and the breadth of their shoulders, according to our author, make these people considered as gigantic. Fed on nutritious fare, inhabiting a climate that inures them to toil, it is no wonder that they are muscular, and attain to a full size. They had sparkling eyes and fine teeth; and among them some might be regarded as comely men.

Some wore long thin whiskers; and all had their long black hair tied on the crown of their heads. The cheeks of some were painted red. Their language has an agreeable and melodious sound. Our voyagers did not see any females, though it was conjectured that they were at no great distance.

The greatest part of the body of the Patagonians is naked, though the severity of the climate is such, as apparently to require the warmest attire. Though it was the summer season, while M. Bougainville was here, there was only a single day on which the thermometer was observed to rise ten degrees above the freezing point.

Some small knives, of the English manufacture, were observed among them, which were probably the gift of Commodore Byron. Their arms consisted of a twisted gut, in the two extremities of which a round pebble was inclosed; and weapons of that kind are common in this part of the American continent. One of them was observed to have gilt nails on his saddle, wooden stirrups inclosed in copper, a bridle made of twisted leather; and, *in short*, a complete Spanish harness.

They

They devour their food raw* with great avidity, and carry it with them on their horses. Fresh water being very scarce in this country, both horses and dogs drink in the sea. M. Bougainville concludes, that the Patagonians lead the same kind of life as the Tartars, traversing the country on horseback, in quest of wild beasts and game. He likewise remarks, that he has since discovered a nation, in the Pacific Ocean, of a more gigantic size than the Patagonians. Where he does not tell us; and we can only take his word. The French, less generous than the English, conceal any remarkable discovery, or wrap it up in mystery.

December 9th, all the sails were set, in order to make head against the force of the tide; but after advancing three miles, they were obliged to come to an anchor. During two whole days, the weather was so tempestuous, that no boat could live, which was a mortifying circumstance, as many of the Patagonians were now seen assembled, in hopes, probably, by another visit, to have their little wants supplied. By the help of glasses it was discovered, that they had constructed some huts on the beach, to be ready to receive their visitors; but fortune did not permit them to enjoy this satisfaction.

On the 12th, the *Boudeuse* lost an anchor, by the parting of the cable; however, a favourable wind springing up, they anchored the same afternoon on the north side of the isle of Elizabeth. Here they found a few bustards hatching their

* *May not the use of raw meat contribute to the uncommon size and strength of these people? The arts of cookery are little adapted to the improvement of the human frame.*

young ; but these birds were so shy, that our adventurers could not get near enough to have a single shot. This island is destitute of wood ; the water is brackish ; and the soil extremely dry.

As they were detained here two days by contrary winds, they had leisure to make some observations on the island. They found, from several traces, that it was occasionally visited by the Indians ; but none of them were then seen.

Having now surmounted the greatest dangers of the navigation of the Straights, they again weighed, and sailed with a strong wind through the channel that divides the islands of Bartholomew and Lions from that of Elizabeth. They coasted along the last-named island, to avoid the breakers that lined the opposite shore. When they advanced beyond Cape Noir, the country assumed a more pleasant and fertile appearance, which afforded a most delightful prospect to the eye, that was tired with the contemplation of desolate scenes.

The weather becoming calm and pleasant, M. Bougainville pleased himself with the idea of doubling Cape Round in a short space ; but in this climate the most flattering appearances are never to be relied on. In a few hours the wind suddenly shifted, and blew with great violence ; while a fog, apparently impenetrable, covered the whole coast. The sails of the *Boudeuse* being split by this tempest, they endeavoured to make Port Famine ; but this attempt was fruitless, as they lost three leagues in nine hours sailing, and were hurried with amazing rapidity into a bay *formed by part of the coast of Terra del Fuego, to which M. Bougainville gives the appellation of Bay Dulcos, from the second officer in the expedition*

pedition, whose knowledge and experience were of the highest consequence in this enterprize.

This bay is described as being very convenient for ships to anchor in. Two small rivers discharge their streams into it. The landing place is a sandy beach, above which a pleasant meadow extends to a considerable distance. Behind this, the woods raise their lofty heads and form an amphitheatre. Our adventurers, in traversing this country, saw no animals, save a few parrots, bustards, ducks, and snipes. Several huts were seen at the mouth of a river, which had been formed by twisting branches of trees into a conical shape. In these huts they found limpets, muscles, and calcined shells. The flood was now observed to come from the east, at the rising of the tide.

The seamen were now engaged in cutting wood for some days; after which they sailed with a propitious gale, and passed Point St. Anne, which covers Port Famine. As the ships were now becalmed for two hours, the commodore took the opportunity of taking the soundings and bearings of Cape Forward, which he mentions as the most southerly point of land on the continent, in the known world; and fixes its latitude at 54 deg. 5 min. 45 sec. south. It consists of three hills, whose tops are covered with snow, which gradually melting by the warmth of the sun, affords perpetual moisture to the roots of trees on the declivities.

M. Bougainville again set sail with a favourable wind in search of a harbour, which received the name of French Bay. Here he resolved to take in wood and water to serve during their voyage across the Southern Ocean. In conse-
que

quence of this resolution the boats were hoisted out; but such a stormy and tempestuous night succeeded, as filled the boldest with fears and apprehensions beyond description.

Next morning, a boat was sent to sound the mouth of a river named Genné, from a gentleman who was a partaker in the dangers and fatigues of the expedition. As it was low water when the boat reached the land, it was impossible to get on shore, without running her aground on the sand, which inconvenience induced M. Bougainville to anchor in a small bay about three miles off, called by his own name.

Bougainville Bay is surrounded by high mountains, which secure it from all winds; so that the sea is unruffled by a breeze. Having anchored here, they landed and erected a hut of the branches of trees, in which they deposited some presents for such of the natives as might happen to wander that way, and placed a white flag on its top; but in the morning they found it demolished, and every thing valuable removed.

On the 18th of December, a kind of camp was formed on shore, by way of security. Some ponds were dug for the convenience of washing, and the water-casks were landed.

The crew of the *Eagle*, in 1765, having cut down more trees than were wanted at that time, this labour was now saved to our adventurers, who likewise found roads ready made through the woods. The remainder of the month was spent in necessary avocations, and in repairing the *Etoile*, which had become very leaky, to the inexpressible fatigue of her crew.

M. Verron, the astronomer, landed on a little island, named the Isle of Observatory; but owing to

to the thickness of the atmosphere, which is almost perpetual here, his labours were, in a great measure, fruitless. Every interval of fine weather, however, the Prince of Nassau, attended by M. Commerçon, pursued their botanical researches, not without success. No fish could be caught in this bay; and the only animal they could kill was a fox.

The commander, intending to survey the coasts, went in his boats with some gentlemen, who intended to accompany him as far as Cape Holland. At setting out they had fair weather; but it soon changed to a hurricane, and obliged them, for shelter, to run up a small river. Here they lay some time, benumbed with cold, and wet to the skin; and, at length, were under the necessity of forming a temporary hut, of the branches of trees, to defend them from the inclemency of the sky. However, the storm still continuing, this situation was found untenable; and, therefore, they sheltered themselves, in the best manner they could, under the sails of the boat; but their night was most uncomfortable.

Early next morning they were fortunate enough to reach the ship. As the weather continued to grow more boisterous, it is probable, they seized the only interval that could have saved them from destruction. Though it was midsummer, the snow was almost incessant, and the storms furious. Nevertheless, when the weather became a little more temperate, M. Bougainville, with the true spirit of adventure, resolved to go on a second expedition.

He embarked in the long-boat, attended by the Etoile's barge, with several of his officers, and in six hours they gained the coast of Terra del Fuego.

Fuego. Coasting along, they crossed an inlet, which the commodore supposed communicated with the sea, at no great distance from Cape Horn. Having almost reached the opposite side of this inlet, they discovered several of the natives, and among them were some, whom he recognised as having seen in his former voyage. These repeated the word *Pecherais*, from whence they received their name as a nation.

The evening advancing, M. Bougainville was unwilling to make a long stay with his new friends, and therefore pushed in to an inlet where he intended to spend the night; but not being able to accomplish his purpose, he landed on the bank of a river, and caused a tent to be constructed of the sails. Afterwards lighting a large fire, they passed the night in tolerable comfort.

M. Bounard was left here to survey the coast, with orders to return when he had made the requisite observations. But M. Bougainville embarking with a part of the company in the barge, rowed to the westward, and discovered an island, on the coast of which they saw some of the natives fishing. Before evening, they arrived in a bay which they named *De la Cormorandiere*.

Early next morning they left this station, and sailed between two islands, called the *Two Sisters*, about nine miles from Cape Forward; and after coasting along, they came, towards evening, to a convenient bay and port, into which a cascade falling, they gave it the appropriate name of the *Bay and Port of Cascade*. This waterfall is about forty yards perpendicular, and forms a beautiful *coup d'œil*. M. Bougainville ascended to its top, and took a view of the surrounding country, *which he found to have the general appearance*
of

of Falkland's Islands. No traces of inhabitants were to be found here; and the reason seems obvious, as there is nothing on which they could subsist.

In this port the French passed the night, which they found excessively cold and incessantly rainy. Next day they had a very narrow escape from destruction, by the boat having nearly overlet, in crossing a bay; owing to the negligence of the steersman. However, they reached the Boudeuse in safety; and found every necessary on board; so that they began to make preparations for sailing.

In the afternoon of the last day of the year, they left Bougainville Bay, and in the evening anchored in the road of Port Gallant, where they were detained three weeks by an unvaried continuance of such boisterous weather, as those, who have never been in these latitudes, can scarcely have any conception of.

Next day, being new year's day, 1768, a party was dispatched to make remarks on the coast, and the numerous islands which sprinkle this part of the straits; and, notwithstanding the severity of the weather, and the almost incessant rains, this party landed at different places; at one of which they saw many trees marked with initial letters, and even whole names, which plainly shewed that some English ships had lately touched there. What put this beyond all doubt, was the discovery of a piece of wood, stamped "Chatham, March 1766."

The weather was so exquisitely severe on the 4th and 5th of January, that no pen can describe it, or scarcely imagination reach its extent. M. Bougainville informs us that, during this most
pierc

piercing season, he sent out a boat to search for anchorage on the coast of Terra del Fuego, and an excellent place was discovered to the south-west of Charles and Monmouth's islands. On the morning of the 6th, which proved more moderate, four small boats, with Indians on board, were observed near Cape Gallant, one of which advanced towards the Bondeuse. In this boat was a man, his wife, and two children; the former of whom went on board without the least symptom of fear, leaving the woman and children in the boat. Some of the other Indians soon after followed his example; and none seemed to express the least surprise, either at the structure of the vessel, or any novelty on board her.

The commodore prevailed on these people to dance and sing, and also entertained them with a kind of concert of music. Whatever viands he presented them with, they devoured with avidity; seeming to be equally pleased with every thing, or rather indifferent to choice. These people were clothed in seals skins, of which likewise they made the sails of their boats and the coverings of their huts.

M. Bougainville describes them as thin, short, and ugly, with a very offensive smell. The women are said to be more disagreeable than the men, and are put to all the laborious employments, while the men act the part of directors, though without the harshness of taskmasters.

Their boats are constructed of the bark of trees, fastened together with rushes, and the seams are caulked with moss. A fire is constantly kept up *in the middle of this crazy vessel, placed on a heap of sand.* Their arms are bows and arrows; *the latter pointed with sharp stones; but these* weapon

weapons seem less designed against an enemy than for the destruction of beasts and birds, from which they derive their subsistence.

They strike the fish with a kind of harpoon, made of bones, about twelve inches long, pointed at the end, and indented on the sides. They live in mean huts, without any partitions, in the centre of which a fire is lighted, and round this the family arrange themselves.

The disposition of these people is of the most amiable kind, but their good nature borders on weakness: they believe in evil genii, and have priests and physicians, whom they suppose capable of deprecating the vengeance of these invisible enemies. With the fewest conveniences in nature, they seem to be content; and though they live in the most inclement climate, hitherto discovered, in the habitable part of the globe, they do not repine at their lot. Besides the other peculiarities of their fate, they seem fewer in number than any other race of men; yet, though it might be supposed they are sufficiently removed from every object of ambition, it is common here, as in larger communities, that the love of superiority lessens their actual enjoyments.

On the 7th, the weather was again intolerably severe; and the whole country was covered with snow. On the 9th, the Indians having previously painted their bodies with red and white streaks, advanced towards the ships; but seeing the boats gone off towards their huts, they all followed, save one, who went on board the *Etoile*.

The French went up to their habitations, which seemed by no means agreeable to the Indians; but on their women being removed, they invited the strangers into one of their huts, where

they entertained them with shell-fish, which they sucked before they delivered them to their guests. These Indians now assumed a lively, cheerful manner, singing and dancing for the amusement of their company; but their mirth was soon interrupted by an unexpected accident.

An Indian boy, who had been on board the *Etoile*, was suddenly seized with the most violent convulsions, and the spitting of blood. As it was customary for these people to put pieces of glass, or whatever else they were presented with, up their nostrils and into their mouth, as amulets against danger, it appears that this boy had followed the same pernicious example. His lips, palate, and gums were cut, and bled freely; on which the Indians conceived that the French had violated the laws of hospitality; an opinion which filled them with jealousy and distrust.

The illness of the child was certainly ascribed to some unfair practices of their visitors; and a jacket, in which he had been dressed, was stripped off and thrown at their feet; but it was instantly seized by one of their number, who seemed less apprehensive of the powers of enchantment than the rest.

The child being now laid on his back, a conjurer knelt between his legs, and pressing the body forcibly with his hands and head, uttered a number of inarticulate vociferations. At intervals, during this ceremony, he blew in the air with his mouth, as if to drive away some evil genius. While this was transacting, an old woman bawled in the ears of the boy, so as to stun him with her noise.

The conjurer, after a short retirement, returned in a new dress, and with an air of triumph,
renewed

renewed his incantations ; but with no better success than before. He had powdered his hair ; and his head bore two wings similar to those with which Mercury is represented.

The life of the child now appearing in imminent danger, the French captain hastily baptized him, unobserved by the Indians, as he tells us. Why he performed this ceremony, under such circumstances, we are perfectly in the dark.

The surgeon arriving, brought with him some gruel and milk, which, with some difficulty, he was permitted to administer to the patient. The conjurers seemed jealous of the surgeon ; but they could not help confessing the superiority of his abilities. It was remarked that, while one of these Indian physicians was endeavouring to expel the disorder, another was busily employed in deprecating that vengeance which they supposed the visit of the strangers had occasioned.

During the absurd attempts of the jugglers to relieve him, the poor boy submitted, without a murmur ; while the affection of his parents, and indeed of the whole party of Indians, displayed itself by floods of tears and the most amiable sensibilities. When they observed that the Frenchmen participated in their grief, they appeared to be less suspicious of them ; and consented that the surgeon should examine the state of the patient.

In the evening, the child apparently was in less pain ; but from many concurring circumstances, it was evident that he had swallowed some glass. M. Bougainville and the surgeon now went on board ; and it was conjectured that the boy died in the night, as loud lamentations were heard, and the Indians next morning were

found to have removed from the spot that had been so fatal to one of their community. Nothing can give us a more favourable opinion of these people, than the concern they shewed for the loss of even an infant member of their society. Let Christians blush while they read this, and learn humanity.

After three days of very unfavourable weather, or adverse winds, they at last sailed on the 16th; but after beating about for a day, they were obliged to return to their former station.

Next day the storms were more violent than ever they had yet been felt: the sea ran mountains high, and the conflict of different winds was the most awful. The tempest subsiding a little, a loud peal of thunder was heard, after which the winds blew with increasing violence. The anchors having dragged, the ships were in the most frightful danger. At this season, however, the shrubs and plants were in bloom, and the trees were covered with a luxuriance of verdure.

The weather continued very stormy till the night of the 21st, when a calm took place, which proved the prelude to one of the most tremendous storms that ever was known; but fortunately its duration was not equal to its violence.

On the 25th, they at last weighed anchor with favourable appearances, and soon after arrived at Cape Quod, a singular promontory consisting of craggy rocks, the most elevated of which bear some resemblance to the ruins of ancient structures. From Bay Gallant to this cape, the verdure of the trees in some measure relieves the eye from the contemplation of mountains whose summits never thaw.

After

After passing Cape Quod, the face of the country was totally changed: nothing but rocks saluted the view, without a blade of vegetation. The hills were wrapped in eternal snow, while the vallies were choked up with ice that seemed to be perpetually accumulating. Sir John Narborough aptly gives this part of the straight the name of Desolation; and surely description cannot paint a more desolate and dreary scene.

As the evening of the 26th was very fine, M. Bougainville determined to continue his way under an easy sail; but before midnight they were enveloped in a thick fog, the wind arose, and the rain descended in torrents, while pitchy darkness concealed the land from their view. They could only steer by guess, and were in the momentary dread of some disastrous accident.

At day break, having got a sight of land, they hoisted additional sails, and proceeded with such rapidity, that they reached the South Sea in thirty-six hours from leaving Cape Gallant; though the whole passage of the Straights had occupied seven weeks and three days. From Cape Virgin to Cape Pillar, M. Bougainville computes to be about three hundred and forty miles.

Though the navigation of the Straights of Magellan is not unattended with difficulty and danger, our author thinks it preferable to doubling Cape Horn; if attempted between September and April; but during the rest of the year the open sea is more eligible. From the opportunities they had of procuring scurvygrass and other vegetables, they had not a single invalid, during the passage, on board either ship.

The commodore now sailed a westerly course, having communicated his instructions to the cap-

tain of the Etoile to keep close in companying the night, and to stretch out by day, to brace as wide a field of discovery as possible without the danger of separating.

For many days M. Bougainville sailed in front of Davis's land, which had so long amused credulous, and disappointed the hopes of a practical mariner. According to its supposition, in M. de Bellin's chart, our adventurers might have sailed over it, and consequently it could not exist in the latitude in which it had been laid down.

Several seagulls being observed on the 17th of February, it was conjectured land could be seen at great distance; but after proceeding in the same course for three days more, none was discovered. From the 23d to the 3d of March, they had easterly winds, with rain and thunder every day immediately before, or soon after, the sun reached the meridian. Some variation, however, was perceptible in the regularity of the trade winds, for which M. Bougainville seems at present to account.

Soon after the ships had got clear of the Straights, an epidemical sore throat attacked most every man on board, which was speedily relieved, by putting vinegar and red-hot brimstone into the water-casks.

Pursuing their course, towards the end of March, they fell in with such shoals of fish that the crews were always able to catch enough for one liberal meal daily. About the same time they found some species that never swim far from the shore, which was a pleasing prelude to the land which they soon discovered, in the form of *four very small islands*, to which M. Bougainville

gave the appellation of *Les quatre Facardins*; but as they lay considerably to leeward, they steered for another island, which lay right ahead.

Here they saw plenty of cocoa-trees, growing on plats of grass, sprinkled with abundance of beautiful flowers. There were also trees of various kinds all over the island. Immense numbers of birds frequented the coasts; but as the sea ran high, and no convenient harbour was discovered, they were prevented from landing.

In coasting along, they had sight of three men, who advanced hastily towards the shore. These M. Bougainville conjectured, were part of the crew of some European ship that had been wrecked there; and, impressed with this belief, he gave the necessary orders for affording them assistance; but he soon discovered that these people suddenly retired to the woods, whence, in a short space, issued a number of the natives with long staves in their hands, which they held up by way of defiance.

By the help of glasses, their habitations were plainly seen. These islanders were very tall, and of a copper complexion.

The following night they were overtaken by a storm of thunder and lightning, while the wind blew almost a hurricane. At the dawn, land was discovered, which appeared to be champaign and verdant. Breakers being observed on the coast, the ship stood out to sea, till the weather should become more calm. They afterwards coasted the island, which appeared to be of a horse-shoe figure, and to produce cocoa-nuts and other trees, which afford an agreeable shade; but the soil is generally sandy and little verdure to be seen.

Many of the natives were observed in their canoes. They were perfectly naked, and some of them carried long pikes in their hands. Night advancing, they lay to, and next morning attempted in vain to discover a landing place, in consequence of which, they held on their course, after naming this spot Harp Island.

In the evening of the same day, on which Harp Island was discovered, they had sight of other land at the distance of seven leagues, exhibiting the appearance of a cluster of islands, which in fact it proved to be, and therefore received the name of the Dangerous Archipelago. Eleven islands were counted, and our author conjectures there are many more; and that their navigation must be very hazardous, as they are surrounded with shoals and breakers. This cluster was first discovered by Quiros in 1606, and was again visited by Roggewein in 1721, who gave it the appellation of the Labyrinth.

For some time the voyage was barren of occurrences; but the scurvy now began to make its appearance; to counteract which every person, afflicted, received a pint of lemonade, in which some drugs were infused.

Water becoming short, they had recourse to distillation, by a process the invention of M. Poissonnier, which answered their expectations. The bread was now kneaded with salt water; nor does it appear that any injurious effects arose from its use.

On the 2d of April, they discovered a steep mountain, which seemed encircled by the sea, and received the name of Boudeuse Peak. To the north of this peak they again had sight of
land,

land, which extended farther than the eye could reach.

By this time, it was become absolutely necessary to put into some port, where they might obtain a supply of refreshments and wood. They were now approaching the newly-discovered land, and in the night, between the 3d and 4th, fires were observed in several places, from whence they were sure that the country was peopled. Next morning they had a near view of the coast; and soon after they saw a number of boats, assembling from various parts of the island. This assemblage of vessels advanced towards the side of the ship, and held up the boughs of the banana-tree.

Considering this as a token of friendship, the French made a display of reciprocal amity. On this the natives rowed along side the *Boudeuse*, and one of them presented a quantity of bananas, and a small pig. In return, M. Bougainville gave them some handkerchiefs and caps; and a friendly intercourse was immediately established.

In a short space, upwards of a hundred canoes surrounded the French ships, laden with bananas, cocoas, and other delicious fruits, highly acceptable; which met with a recompence in toys, and other articles, very grateful to the natives.

No jealousy or distrust, on the part of the natives, seemed to check the correspondence that was begun; and this gave the French an evident proof, of the conscious integrity of these islanders. Suspicion, however necessary sometimes, always arises from a sense of guilt: the most innocent know it the least.

As evening came on, the ships stood out to sea, and the natives returned to the shore. During the night, a number of fires were seen on the
island

island, almost equidistant, which the French interpreting into illuminations in their honour, sky-rockets were sent up from both ships, in return for the compliment.

Next day the boats were sent off in search of an anchoring place, while the ships kept plying to the windward of the island. The description which M. Bougainville gives of this place, as viewed from the sea, is extremely captivating. "The mountains," says he, "though of great height, are every where clotted with the finest verdure, even to the extreme points of their lofty summits: one peak, in particular, shoots up to an enormous height, gradually tapering as it rises; yet it was every where covered with the most luxuriant foliage, exhibiting a pyramidal appearance, adorned with garlands. The lower land consists of an intermixture of woods and meadows, while the coast is champaign, and abounding in cocoa-trees, under the shade of which, the habitations of the natives stand."

As M. Bougainville coasted the island, which proved to be the famed and beautiful Otaheite, he was charmed with the appearance of a noble cascade, which, falling immediately from the summit of a mountain into the sea, produced a magnificent effect. Very near the fall of this cascade, was an Indian town, near which it was the wish of our adventurers to have cast anchor; but after repeated soundings, it was found rocky and unfit for their purpose.

Next day the traffic was renewed, with the same unsuspecting confidence as before. The natives now shewed their predilection for iron. Among their visitors were several women, the *lightness* of whose dress only increased their
natural

natural charms, which it was impossible to behold without emotion.

By the morning of the 6th, the ships had nearly reached the northern extremity of this island, when they discovered another; but as the passage between them seemed dangerous, M. Bougainville resolved to return to a bay they had discovered, when they first made land, and here at last the ships were safely moored.

This being done, the natives put off in their canoes, in greater numbers than before; displaying every token of regard, and perpetually crying out *Tayo*, which was afterwards found to signify Friend. The natives were excessively pleased with nails, with which they were presented by the officers and sailors. The boats were now crowded with women, whose beauty of face was equal to that of the ladies of Europe, and the symmetry of their forms much superior. But to their shame be it known, that they shewed none of that modest reserve, which is the most fascinating charm in female manners.

One of the crew, going on shore, had his dress and person examined with the most minute attention, which threw him into the most dreadful panic, lest he should be murdered, or otherwise ill-used by the natives; but his apprehensions were groundless, for these people were only indulging a natural curiosity, and when that was satisfied, they testified the innocence of their designs, by every mark of attention, which, according to their own ideas, would have been pleasing to their visitor.

The commander and some of his officers now landed, to view the watering place, when the inhabitants flocked round them, with looks of in-
expressible

expressible curiosity. Some of them, more courageous than the rest, approached and touched the French, and seemed doubtful whether they were beings of the same conformation with themselves. They were wholly unarmed, and shewed great satisfaction at this visit from the strangers.

One of the chiefs conducted M. Bougainville to his house, where he was introduced to his father and several women. These last paid their compliments, by placing their hands on their breasts, and frequently repeating the word *Tayo*. The father of the chief was a venerable figure, with a long white beard, and had no symptoms of the decrepitude of age. His face was devoid of wrinkles, and his body still nervous and fleshy.

This aged sire expressed none of that wonder or curiosity, which characterized the rest of the natives: on the strangers' entering, he testified by his air, that their arrival was unwelcome, and left the apartment without returning their compliments. Perhaps he was apprehensive that they were come to settle, which might justly have been suspected, of disturbing the happy repose, in which these islanders had hitherto lived.

The house of the chief was about twenty feet long, and eight feet wide, and was covered with thatch. Two wooden figures were observed, which M. Bougainville took for idols. They were fixed against two opposite pillars; and stood on pedestals about two yards high.

The chief having seated his guests on a grass-plat, in the front of his house, presented them with a collation, consisting of boiled fish, water, and fruit. While they were regaling themselves, he produced two collars composed of osiers, and adorned with sharks teeth and black feathers,
which

which he put on the necks of M. Bougainville and another gentleman of his party. After this he presented them with some pieces of cloth ; but just as the French were about to take their leave, one of them found his pocket picked of a pistol. A complaint being made to the chief, he was about to order a general search, but the commodore would not permit him to have this trouble ; intimating, however, that the weapon which had been stolen would kill the thief.

As they were returning to the shore, they observed an Indian, of extraordinary symmetry of form, reclined at the foot of a tree, who prevailed on the French to sit down by him, while he entertained them with a song, to the slow music of a flute, which an attendant blew with his nose.

Some of the Indians went on board the ships, and spent the night without the least apprehension. To gratify them to the utmost, they were elegantly feasted ; and, to conclude, were entertained with music and fire-works. The latter seemed to terrify rather than delight these simple people.

Next day the chief, whose name was Ereti, came on board with some presents, and as a convincing testimony of the integrity of his own heart, returned the stolen pistol.

Preparations were now made to land the sick, and to fill the water-casks. They began to form a camp on the borders of a fine rivulet, as well for the protection of the sick, as the security of those who were engaged in their necessary avocations. For some time, Ereti beheld their proceedings without apparent emotion, and took his leave. In a few hours, however, he returned with his father and other principal persons, who

remonstrated with M. Bougainville, on the impropriety and injustice of taking possession of the country; at the same time intimating, that they were welcome to remain there by day, but insisting that they should go on board every night. The commodore, on the contrary, was firm in his resolution to complete his encampment, and endeavoured to convince the natives of the necessity he was under of so doing, as well for his own sake as theirs.

An Indian conference was now held, at the close of which, Ereti came forward, and desired to know if the strangers meant to take up their residence there for life, or for what period? In answer to this, M. Bougainville put eighteen small stones into the hands of the chief, making signs that so many suns would go down on them, while they staid here. The islanders tried to confine him to nine days, but the commodore positively refusing to comply, the business was dropped.

Peace and confidence seemed again to possess the natives, and Ereti accommodated the sick with the use of a large building on the side of the rivulet. Every precaution, however, was taken to avoid surprise, by distributing arms among all who were on shore. The first night M. Bougainville passed at the encampment, Ereti having added his supper to that of the commodore, invited a few select friends to partake of the repast, and after that, expressed his wish to have a display of fire-works, which he beheld with mingled pleasure and astonishment.

The camp being completely formed, and a guard placed, none of the Indians, who surrounded it in crowds, were admitted, except Ereti and his

his friends. A free traffic, however, was carried on between them and the natives; and these hospitable people seemed to vie with each other, in shewing their attention to oblige their visitors.

To avoid misunderstanding, the commodore applied to Ereti for leave to cut down some trees. The chief condescended even to mark the trees that were to be felled, while the natives assisted in the labour. Nails were the most acceptable recompence for services; but as a propensity to thieving was soon discovered among them, the French were under the necessity of keeping a vigilant eye on the conduct of these islanders, who, it is said, are as ingenious in their depredations, as the pick-pockets of Europe.

Notwithstanding this stigma, which all voyagers have fixed on the Otahiteans, it does not appear that they plunder from each other; hence it is evident, that an insatiable desire of possessing curiosities, they have never seen before, stimulates them to commit robberies. The article of thieving excepted, which could not be wholly restrained, every other intercourse, between the French and the natives, was carried on in the most harmonious manner. The seamen, sometimes in parties, sometimes singly, made incursions into the country, and were always invited into the houses of the natives, with the most tempting allurements, and the most generous confidence.

M. Bougainville gives the most enchanting description of the interior of this beautiful island. In his various progresses, he was delighted with scenes which no pen can describe, no pencil can paint. Sometimes he saw happy societies under the shade of trees, who welcomed him with the most natural politeness; and in every place, he

observed the most incontestible demonstrations of happiness and love.

The French commander presented Ereti with some European poultry, grain, and garden seeds, which were gratefully received; and he flatters himself, that his generosity in this respect, will not be quite thrown away; but that the Otahiteans will reap the benefit of it to the end of time.

Soon after the camp was formed, the commodore was visited by Toutaa, the chief of another district, a tall and well made man, who, with several attendants, brought various presents, for which he received an adequate return. In a visit which M. Bougainville paid this chief, he met with such kind attentions as are not reconcileable to European manners, where the wife or the daughter are seldom pressed on the guest, to increase his gratifications.

One of the Indians happening to be killed in an affray, his countrymen complained of this violation of the rights of hospitality. On examination, it appeared that this unfortunate man had lost his life by a shot; and the strictest enquiry was made after the perpetrator of this deed, but in vain. Though the natives did not intermit their dealings with the French on this account, it was evident they were more reserved, and some of them began to remove their effects to the mountains. Even Ereti required a few presents from the commodore to reconcile him.

The ships running foul of each other in a gale, and being in danger of driving on the shore, a boat was sent out to sound. At this unfortunate juncture, news was brought, that three of the *Indians* had either been murdered or wounded in
their

their huts, in consequence of which, universal consternation and dismay had seized their countrymen, and they were all retiring up the country.

On receiving this intelligence, the commodore immediately went on shore, and selecting four marines, on whom rested a strong suspicion of this foul crime, he clapped them in irons in the presence of Ereti, which served to conciliate the affection of the Indians, and the night passed at the encampment in perfect repose.

Towards midnight, however, the wind blew with great violence, while the rain descended in torrents, and the whole scene was tempestuous in the highest degree. During this storm, the *Boudeuse* received very considerable damage and loss, and was in the most imminent danger of being wrecked. In short, after having parted all her cables, she was rapidly driving on the shore, when in the moment of despair, a gale from the land saved them from destruction. For his zeal and abilities on this distressing occasion, M. Bougainville pays a grateful compliment to M. de la Giraudais, the commander of the *Etoile*.

Soon after day light, it was observed that the camp was destitute of its usual visitors, and that the whole vicinity was depopulated. The Prince of Nassau went on shore with a small party, and after proceeding some way, met Ereti, who advanced towards him with a countenance expressive of hope and terror. A number of women, in the company of the chief, dropping on their knees, kissed the prince's hand, and bathed in tears, exclaimed Tayo Mati, "ye are our friends, and ye kill us." The prince humanely exerted himself to restore confidence, and in this he at last succeeded.

On this M. Bougainville left the ship, and taking with him a quantity of presents, conferred them on the principal persons; intimating how unhappy he was at the misfortune that had happened, and assuring them that the perpetrator should not pass unpunished. The Indians caressed the commodore, and the general sentiment seemed expressive of satisfaction that peace was once more established.

Having discovered a passage to the northward, the *Etoile* sailed through it on the 14th, and immediately the *Boudeuse* followed. The commodore now took possession of the island, in the name of his sovereign, with the usual formalities. Early next morning the *Boudeuse* got clear of the reefs, when the wind dying away, the ship was rapidly carried towards the rocks by the force of the tide, and had it not been for a providential breeze, in the moment of imminent danger, they must inevitably have perished.

Happy in this deliverance, they laboured to get clear of a repetition of danger, and in a few hours they got into the open sea.

When the Indians first observed their visitors were about to leave them, Ereti came hastily on board, and embracing his acquaintances, whom he was about to part with for ever, wept over them with tears of genuine regard. This scene was scarcely passed, when the wives of this generous chief came up, laden with a variety of refreshments. With them came also an Indian named Aotourou, who requested permission to accompany the strangers. His request being complied with, Ereti recommended him to the care and protection of the officers, as a well-beloved friend; giving them to understand, that

1

they

they had the same name and place in his heart.

In the boat was a number of weeping beauties: to one of them, who was peculiarly lovely, Aotourou made a present of three pearls from his ears; and embracing her with the warmest affection, tore himself from her arms.

The parting adieu between the French and these islanders was most affecting; but alas! if we may give credit to our own voyagers, they will for ever have cause to lament the visit of the Boudeuse. A disease that poisons the fountains of life, and turns pleasure into pain, seems to have been communicated by the crew of this ship, to the unsuspecting natives. Is it not enough that European avarice and ambition disturb the repose of distant nations! why should their vices, and their diseases taint the spotless mind, or the uncontaminated frame! O why were ye ever drawn from your primeval obscurity, ye once happy natives of Otaheite! We have only taught you to feel wants which cannot be gratified; we have planted ills which never can be cured. Such are the *blessings* that the civilized confer on the savage!

M. Bougainville obtained, in his traffic with the natives, about one hundred and forty hogs, and eight hundred fowls; and he might have procured more, had his stay been longer. No noxious animals or insects were seen here, which in general prove the greatest curse of hot climates. Of the salubrity of the air of Otaheite, there can be no doubt; for though the French laboured hard all day in the sun, and frequently slept at night in the open air, on the bare ground, not one of them contracted any disorder; while those, who had been infected with the scurvy, speedily recovered their health. The natives, indeed, seem to reach
longer

longevity, without feeling any of its concomitants. Their manner of life, no doubt, contributes to this, and co-operates with the purity of the air. Fish and vegetables are their principal food, and the clear fountain their only drink. They are averse to any thing that tastes or smells strong, and by their abstemiousness obtain an exemption from disease, which may be regarded as one of their greatest felicities.

According to M. Bougainville, the natives of Otaheite may be divided into two classes, having hardly any personal resemblance, yet practising the same customs, associating in the same friendly manner, and conversing in the same dialect. The first race of these people are much taller and better proportioned than the other. Few of these are less than six feet high, and so extremely well proportioned, that in order to paint a Hercules or a Mars, it is impossible to find more beautiful models. Their features are exactly like those of the Europeans, their hair is black, and their skins are a clear brown.

The other Indians are about the middle stature, have almost the features and complexions of mulattoes, and rough curled hair. Of this latter tribe was Aotourou, whose want of personal beauty was amply compensated for, by the goodness of his understanding*.

Both tribes have the upper part of the face, permitting the beard on the chin to grow, and a whisker on each lip. Their hair is variously disposed. Their nails are permitted to grow to an

* Some English gentlemen, who saw this exotic in Paris, flatly contradict M. Bougainville's opinion. They represent him as one of the most stupid blockheads that could be conceived.

enormous length. Among these people only, one cripple was seen, and his misfortune seemed to be the effect of accident. According to the opinion of the surgeon, the smallpox is known among them; but this idea seems to want confirmation; we wish it may be erroneous.

The people of Otaheite stain the lower parts of their backs and their thighs with a deep blue, as will be more particularly described in Cook's Voyages. M. Bougainville mentions it as a singular circumstance, that the practice of painting the body has prevailed in all ages and in all countries, among the rude and among the refined; but had he considered that vanity is a principle inherent in every human breast, and that females, in particular, knowing their defenceless state, practise every art to render themselves beloved, he would have ceased to wonder that the same cause should so universally have produced the same effect.

The natives of Otaheite, our author remarks, have not the slightest doubt of the integrity of each other; and they enjoy in common whatever is necessary to the support of life. Their houses are open by day and by night, and whoever enters, may freely eat of what he finds. In like manner they gather fruit from every tree; and all the level country being a kind of continued orchard, seems to be one common property. Yet with such exalted ideas of general benevolence, these people were most dexterous in stealing the property of the French. The chiefs, however, did not seem to encourage the depredations of their inferiors; but, on the contrary, they recommended severity to be used against such as should be found deficient in honesty.

They have large vessels, named peringua, in which they make descents on an enemy's country, and even engage in naval conflicts. A pike, and a bow with a sling, are their only arms. If Aotourou's information is to be credited, the consequence of their battles is very fatal to the vanquished. The men and boys, who are taken captive, are most cruelly used, and the women and girls are subjected to the caprice of the victor. Aotourou declared himself the produce of one of those alliances, his mother being a prisoner from Opia, a neighbouring island, with the inhabitants of which they are frequently at war. M. Bougainville ascribes the diversity between the two races of people, to this intercourse with the captive women of the adjacent isles.

In each district, the will of the chief is the supreme law, from which there is no appeal; but the chief himself generally consults with the principal inhabitants before he comes to any decision.

M. Bougainville says, that when the moon exhibits a particular aspect, the natives offer up human sacrifices. He also mentions one circumstance which corroborates the idea that these people originated on the continent, from whence their ancestors must have emigrated. Whenever any one sneezes, his companions cry out Evaroua teatoua; that is, the good being awoken thee.

The principal people appear to indulge in polygamy, and indeed it is common among all ranks; or rather universal love is characteristic of the Otaheiteans. Both of the parents are equally fond of nursing their offspring. The women have little to do but to submit implicitly to the will of the men; and so far are the latter from wishing to lay any restraints on the passions of their women

that they are often the first to recommend a person, with whom they may indulge them.

The commodore having been at great expence in bringing Aotourou to Paris, put him there under the tuition of a person eminent for teaching the art of speech to those who were born deaf and dumb; but after repeated examinations, this gentlemen found the Otaheitean incapable of pronouncing any of the French nasal vowels, and but few of the consonants.

Aotourou informed M. Bougainville, that an English ship had arrived at Otaheite about eight months before the French touched at that island. This appears to have been the Dolphin, commanded by Captain Wallis; and from him they had gained some knowledge of the use of iron.

On the 16th of April, 1768, M. Bougainville discovered an island, and at a considerable distance they descried another, which their Indian adventurer called Oumaitia. He gave them to understand, that he had a strong attachment for a female of that island, and if they would touch there, he assured them they would meet with the same refreshments and hospitality as they had found among his countrymen.

The commander, however, was deaf to these temptations, and same day lost sight of this island. The following night proved remarkably fair, and the stars appearing with unclouded lustre, Aotourou pointed out a constellation, in the shoulder of Orion, by which he told them if they would steer, it would soon bring them to a fine island, where he had numerous acquaintances. But as M. Bougainville persisted in his resolution of not altering his course, the Indian became very uneasy; and in addition to the number of *hogs, fowls, and fruits*, which he represented

were to be obtained on his favourite island. He particularized the number of fine women, and they were abundantly liberal of their favours.

The commodore still appearing inflexible, Aotourou ran to the steerage, and seizing the helm, tried to steer the course he intended, and it was with difficulty he was forced to give up his intention.

Early the following morning, he ascended the masthead, and for several hours wistfully scanned the spot that attracted his regard. The evening night he had pointed out a number of stars, whose names he gave in his native language. It was afterwards ascertained, that this was not unacquainted with the phases of the moon, or the prognostics that evince an approaching change of the weather. It likewise appeared that his countrymen frequently directed their course at sea by the stars. M. Bougainville observed that the natives of Otaheite are fully persuaded that the sun and moon are peopled.

The weather continued favourable till the middle of April, when they had the misfortune to lose their principal pilot by an apoplectic fit. In the beginning of May, they discovered the continent at the distance of ten or twelve leagues, being unknown to Aotourou, he imagined it to be M. Bougainville's country. As they approached the largest of these islands, the coasts appeared remarkably steep, and clothed with trees. Fires were seen on shore, and several hundred natives peeped from under the shade of the trees.

Soon after, a boat with five Indians came steering towards the ship; but though a friendly invitation was made, not one

would venture on board. Except a bandage round the waist, they were perfectly naked. Aotourou addressed them in the language of Otaheite, but they understood not a word he said. As they held up some cocoa-nuts, M. Bougainville supposed they might wish to barter them, and therefore ordered out a boat with a view of visiting these strangers; but as soon as they perceived his intentions, they rowed off with all possible expedition.

In a short time, however, other boats came in sight, and some of them, less diffident than the former, came close up under the ship's side, but none could be prevailed on to come on board. They exchanged pieces of an exquisitely fine shell, yams, cocoa-nuts, and a water-hen of the most beautiful plumage, for pieces of red stuff; but they seemed to set little value on the most favourite articles among the Otaheiteans. One of these Indians had a cock which he would not part with on any terms.

From the features of these islanders, M. Bougainville conjectures they are less amiable in their dispositions than those they had lately been conversant with. They are of a middle size and extremely alert; and such dexterous thieves, that it was impossible to guard against their depredations.

Their boats were ingeniously constructed, and furnished with out-leagers. In these, they followed the French vessels a considerable way out to sea, while several others, from the adjoining islands, joined the naval procession, and made an appearance both novel and agreeable. In one of the boats was an aged female, remarkable for the ugliness of her features.

As the weather now fell calm, the commodore gave up an intention he had formed of sailing between the islands, though the channel was four miles broad; and standing out to sea, they soon descried another island, even while they were yet in view, by the assistance of a bright moon light, of those they had lately left.

Next morning they found their new discovery to be a beautiful island, consisting of alternate mountains and valleys, clothed with the richest verdure, and finely shaded by the spreading branches of the cocoa and other trees. Near the western point was a ledge of rocks, on which the sea broke with such violence, as must render landing very dangerous, if not impracticable.

Many canoes put off from this island, and sailed round the ships, though they were proceeding at the rate of seven knots an hour. Only one of them, however, would venture near; the crew of which made signs for the French to land, which they wished to have done, had not the breakers prevented them. At this time the man at the masthead observed a number of boats sailing to the southward.

On the following day they came in sight of another island; but the fogs intercepted their view. The last-mentioned land is situated where Tasman has laid down a number of islands, which he discovered and named Heemskirk, Prince William, Pylstaart, Amsterdam, and Rotterdam. The longitude likewise nearly corresponds with those which navigators have called Solomon's Isles; so that they are probably the same. It seems, *indeed*, that there are many islands scattered *about in this latitude*, and hence M. Bougainville

gaw

gave them the general name of the Archipelago of Navigators.

On the morning of the 11th, another island was discovered, which obtained the appellation of Forlorn Hope. At this period the weather was extremely unfavourable; and M. Bougainville observes, that in the Pacific the approach of land is generally announced by violent tempests, which increase in fury as the moon wanes; while the vicinity of the islands is generally foreboded by thick clouds at the horizon, and equally weather.

Under such circumstances, they found it difficult to proceed with the necessary precaution; and as the crew were in want of provisions, and water, in particular, grew very scarce, they were obliged to take the advantage of every breeze of wind by night as well as day, and run all hazards or fear of perishing by famine.

Their distress was soon aggravated by the attacks of the scurvy, which inflamed their mouths to such a degree, that they found a great difficulty in swallowing. Another disease arising from a promiscuous commerce between the sexes, likewise made its appearance, with all its most formidable symptoms, which completed the misery of their situation.

Steering a westerly course, on the 22d they discovered two islands, one of which they named Aurora, and the other Whitsun Isle, from the day on which it was discovered. Proceeding to the northward of the first discovered island, as an unexpected calm prevented them from passing between the two, they descried a rising land in a conical form, which received the appellation of *Oil Peak*. In the afternoon mountainous lands

at ten leagues distance, were perceived, towering, as it were, over and above the island of Aurora.

Next day, the land last seen proved to be an island of great height, wholly covered with trees. A number of canoes were coasting the shore, but none approached the ships. In the morning, the commodore dispatched three boats, well-manned, to take in wood, and to learn the circumstances of the island. In the afternoon, M. Bougainville followed them; and had the satisfaction to see the natives assisting his men in carrying the wood to the boats.

The officer commanding the boat's crew informed him, that on his first landing, the natives, armed with bows and arrows, assembled on the shore, and made a shew of resistance. The French, however, landed, and the Indians retreated in an attitude of self-defence. The Prince of Nassau approaching them singly, they no longer retired, but accepted some presents of red cloth, which at once conciliated their good will. The natives now advanced with an appearance of friendship, and distributed some fruit among the seamen, for which they refused to accept any return.

These people intimated, that they were engaged in hostilities with the natives of a different district of the island; and even while they were giving this explanation of their situation, an armed party of Indians made their appearance from the westward, while the former seemed determined not to retreat; but the want of courage in their enemies prevented their resolution from being put to the test.

M. Bougainville remained on the island till the boats had completed their lading, when he
tor

took possession of it in the name of the French king. As the boats were putting off, the islanders, who had probably meditated an attack, which they had not time to carry into execution, complimented them with a shower of arrows and stones : some even plunged into the waves, aiming their fury at the supposed invaders, and burling defiance at their enemies. One of the seamen being wounded in this unprovoked assault, a few muskets were fired to intimidate them ; on which they fled with precipitation to the woods, and from the cries and lamentations that were heard, it is probable some of them were wounded.

The commodore having observed many of the natives afflicted with the leprosy, gave it the name of the Isle of Lepers. Some of these people had mulatto features, and others were perfect negroes. Few women were seen among them, and these were remarkably ordinary, and ill made.

The females of this singular country carry their children in a bag of cloth slung at their backs ; on these clothes are elegant drawings in a fine crimson dye. The noses of the men are pierced and hung with ornaments : they wear a bracelet on their arm, which had the appearance of ivory, and pieces of tortoiseshell round their necks.

Clubs, stones, bows, and arrows, form their weapons : their arrows are reeds, pointed with bone. Their canoes bore a strong resemblance to those of the island of Navigators ; but they did not approach sufficiently near to give an opportunity of observing their particular construction.

Near the beach on which M. Bougainville landed, is a lofty hill, extremely steep ; yet clothed with a superabundance of verdure. The vegetation

getable productions here are much less luxuriant than those of Otaheite, owing, as it is supposed, to the lightness of the soil. Figs, of a species not seen before, were found in this island. Separate inclosures were observed, which probably marked the distinctions of property.

It is probable, that these people lead very miserable lives, from the perpetual wars between different districts of the island. The sound of a drum, harsh and dissonant to the ear, was heard in the woods, which it was conjectured was a signal for the Indians to rally their forces.

Aotourou formed a very contemptible opinion of these people, when compared with his own countrymen. He had not the slightest idea of their language.

On the 23d, more land was discovered, which, as they advanced, seemed to inclose almost the whole horizon, so that the ships were surrounded in one extensive gulph. The night of the 25th was spent in tacking, and in the morning it was discovered, that the currents had carried the vessel several miles farther to the south than their reckoning. The number of isles now seen exceeded calculation, nor could any end of these extensive tracks be discovered. Proceeding, the land assumed a beautiful aspect, being diversified with fine trees, between spots which bore the marks of cultivation. Some parts of the mountains being naked and spotted with a red earth, gave the commodore an idea that they contained minerals.

Arriving at an inlet which had been seen the preceding day, a number of negro Indians approached in their boats, but no signs of amity could induce them to come on board. On the
nor

th shore they saw many of the natives, and the boats put off from thence, but refused to receive any communication with the French.

At the distance of eight miles from this spot, islands were seen, which formed the entrance to a fine bay. The boats being sent forward to land, the report of a musket was heard, which gave the commodore some uneasiness.

On their return, in the evening, it appeared that, in disobedience to the orders of the commander, one of them had left her consort; and approaching near the shore, the Indians discharged two arrows at the crew, which outrage was returned by musketry and some larger guns. A projecting point of land prevented the boat being seen; but from the incessant firing, it was apprehended that she had been attacked by the enemy with some force; in consequence of which the g-boat was ordered out to her assistance, but before she was ready, the missing boat was seen sailing round.

The drums on shore now beat incessantly, and the cries of the wounded, who retreated to the woods, pierced their ears. "I immediately," says M. Bougainville, "made signal for the boat to come on board, and took my measures to prevent our being dishonoured, for the future, by such an abuse of the superiority of our power."

The last-mentioned country consisted of a number of small islands. The inhabitants went naked, except a bandage round their waist; and in most every respect resembled those of the Isle of Lepers. M. Bougainville very prudently declined any attempt to trade with these people, whom he could not suppose well inclined to those who had done them such essential injuries.

On the morning of the 27th, they again set sail; and in a few hours had sight of a fine plantation of trees, between which were regular walks. Many of the natives were descried near this spot; and as an inlet was observed at no great distance, the commodore ordered the boats to be hoisted out; but it was found impracticable to land.

The ships now quitted this great cluster of islands, which received the general appellation of the Archipelago of the Great Cyclades. It is conjectured to occupy no less extent than three degrees of latitude and five of longitude. M. Bougainville says, that these islands are not the same with the *Tierra Austral del Espirito Santo* of Quiros; but that Roggwein saw the northern extremity of them, which he denominated *Groningen* and *Tienhoven*.

Our author now relates a very singular fact, which, as it shews the romantic turn of some minds, and at the same time does honour to human nature, it would be depriving our readers of a pleasure, were we to withhold it.

On board the *Etoile* was a person, reported to be a woman, which opinion was pretty well confirmed by her voice, shape, and want of beard. The commodore was desirous of ascertaining this curious circumstance; and enquiring into the fact, the party confessed her sex, while floods of tears streamed down her face. She related her extraordinary life with the genuine simplicity that characterizes truth. Born in Burgundy, and left an orphan; her fortune was ruined by the unfortunate issue of a law-suit. On this she resolved to lay aside the habit of her sex, and engaged in the service of a gentleman at Paris

but hearing of M. Bougainville's intended expedition round the world, she repaired to Rochfort, where, just before the ships sailed, she entered into the service of M. de Commerçon, who made the voyage with a view of increasing his botanical knowledge.

She followed her master with extreme fidelity, and with astonishing courage and resolution, through deep snows, on the hoary tops of mountains in the Straights of Magellan, carrying loads of plants, herbs, arms, and provisions, with alacrity and pleasure.

Whilst our adventurers were at Otaheite, the men of that island flocked round our heroine, and exclaiming, this is a woman! were about to treat her with rudeness, had not an officer rescued her from their hands, and ordered her to be delivered unviolated on board the ship. Such is the little tale of this adventurous female, whose purity of morals, amid the licentious scenes which she must have sometimes been obliged to witness, was as extraordinary as her courage.

M. Bougainville observes, that this is the first woman who ever circumnavigated the globe; and remarks on the singularity of her situation, should the ships have chanced to have been wrecked on some desert island in this great ocean.

On the night of the 4th of June, some breakers were seen by moonlight, at half a league's distance. In the morning they discovered a low, flat island, abounding in birds, which was named the Shoal of Diana.

About this period several species of fruit, and some pieces of wood, floated by the ship, and an uncommon species of flying fish was seen, with a black body and red wings.

The salt provisions were now become so putrid, that the crew, though almost on the point of starving, could scarcely swallow them; and, therefore, the rats were industriously hunted and eaten in preference to them. The remaining peas were only sufficient for forty days consumption, and the bread for two months; so that it became absolutely necessary to steer another course.

Before day-break on the 10th, an agreeable fragrance impregnated the air, a proof that they were in the vicinity of land, which appeared by sun-rising. This is described as a most delicious country, divided near the coast into groves and plains; behind which the land rises in the form of an amphitheatre, till it is lost in the clouds. The most lofty of this chain of mountains could not be less than seventy miles inland. The whole island appeared to be rich and fertile; but the deplorable situation the ships companies were in, would not admit of their staying to take a more accurate survey.

Towards night, a most prodigious swell drove the ships violently towards land, and they were soon within two miles of it. The night was passed in this dangerous situation, taking advantage of every slight breeze to clear the shore. A number of boats were seen coasting the island, on many parts of which fires gleamed.

For several successive days the fog was so thick, that the *Boudeuse* was obliged to fire frequent guns to keep company with the *Etoile*. Several shell-fish, called cornets, leaped into the vessels in the night; and as these animals are never found but in shallow water, this circumstance sufficiently indicated the soundings they were in.

The weather becoming fine on the 16th, on the 17th and the following day, several islands were discovered; one of which was called Ushant, from its similitude to the French island of that name. By this time our voyagers were reduced to very great extremities; the allowance of bread and peas was considerably reduced. They had a goat on board, brought from Falkland's islands, which yielded them milk daily; yet the starving crew demanded this victim; and the butcher, who had been her feeder, burst into tears when he was compelled to plunge his knife into the breast of his favourite. Soon after a dog fell a sacrifice to the dire demands of hunger: in short, every thing that had life, or was edible, was greedily devoured.

On the 18th, a number of islands were discovered, and on the 20th many more. The navigators now struggled with the most aggravated calamities. On the 25th high land was discovered, which appeared to terminate in a cape. Thence they doubled with the most lively transport; and they were now sure of having left the Archipelago of Islands, amidst which they had long been in the hourly danger of perishing. This was called Cape Deliverance, and a neighbouring bay received the appellation of the Gulph of Louisiade.

About sixty leagues north of Cape Deliverance, land was again discovered, which proved to be two small islands. As the ships drew towards the coast, the natives came off in their boats, carrying from two to twenty men each. Those people were as black as the negroes of Guinea, and they had long curled hair. They were armed with lances and bows, and kept up a continual shouting
which

which had more the appearance of war than peace.

When the boats, which had been sent to reconnoitre the coast, returned, it was reported, that the sea broke on all parts of the coast; that they found only one small river; and that the land was wholly covered with wood. The habitations of the natives are scattered over the mountains, which extend down to the very beach.

Some of the Indians following one of the ship's boats, put themselves into an attitude of defiance; but fortunately for himself, he desisted in time from hostilities.

M. Bougainville says, he was now advanced too far to return; but that he still hoped to find a passage between the islands; though the weather was extremely foggy and unfavourable. In the morning of the 1st of July, they found themselves in the same station they had quitted the night before, having been impelled, and again driven back by the tides. Soon after they discovered Denny's Race, as it was called, from the master of the Boudeuse. A race, it should be observed, is that part of a straight or channel, where two opposite tides meet.

Boats being sent out to find anchorage, about one hundred and fifty of the natives advanced in their canoes, armed with shields, lances, and bows; and hastily rowing up to the French, began the attack with hideous outcries. The first firing of musketry did not deter them; but on the second, which it was supposed had more effect, they fled in precipitation, and some of them, leaving their canoes, swam to the shore.

Two canoes were taken in this conflict, on the stern of which was the figure of a man's head
wi

with a long beard. The eyes were mother of pearl, the ears tortoiseshell, and the lips were painted a vermilion red. Exclusive of their weapons and utensils, in these boats were found cocoa-nuts and other fruits; and shocking to relate, the jaw of a man half broiled.

The natives of this coast are negroes; they colour their hair yellow, red, and white; and their clothing consists of a single piece of matting round their waists. This place received the name of the Isle of Choiseul.

On the 4th, some elevated lands were seen, from whence a few Indians coming off, lay on their oars, and accepted such trifling presents as were thrown to them. This inspiring them with a little confidence, they now exhibited some cocoa-nuts, exclaiming, Bouca, bouca, onelle! and seemed highly delighted when they found the strangers repeat the same words. The French then made signs for them to fetch some more cocoa-nuts; but they had scarcely begun to withdraw, before one of them discharged an arrow, which, however, did no damage.

These people were perfectly naked; had long ears bored, and short curled hair, which some of them had dyed red. Their teeth were also red, probably from chewing betel.

This island, which was named Bouka, appeared to be cultivated, and from the number of huts which was seen, was probably very populous. The profusion of cocoa-trees, dispersed over a beautiful plain, was a sufficient temptation for landing; but the rapidity of the currents prevented it.

Two more islands were descried on the 5th and as the wood and water were expended, a
 Vol. V. T dif

disease was making the most alarming progress, the commodore was determined to land. Accordingly, the ships came to an anchor, and the water-casks were sent on shore, while a tent was erected for the sick. Here they found plenty of wood; but no fruits. Two huts were discovered near the encampment, on the banks of a rivulet, and several traces of the Indians having lately been there; but none now made their appearance, which gave the invalids an opportunity of ranging without fear, for the recovery of their health; and they found this a most desirable spot, had it not been for a deficiency in vegetable productions, fit for food.

They saw here a large blue-crested pigeon, with a note so plaintive, that the seamen at first mistook it for the lamentations of human beings in the neighbourhood of the mountains.

M. Bougainville relates a singular incident. A seaman, on examining some shells on the beach, found a plate of lead, buried in the sand, on which the following letters were very visible:

—HORD HERE
—ICK MAJESTY'S

The marks of the nails, by which it had been fastened, plainly appeared; and it was evident, that the natives must have torn down and broken the plate.

This circumstance gave rise to a diligent search, and a few miles from the watering place, a spot was discovered where the English had encamped. Several trees were found lately felled, and others *sawn in pieces*. A very large and conspicuous tree was seen, on which the inscription had been *affixed*. One of the trees, which had been cut
dov

down, had put forth shoots of about four months growth.

Our voyager considers this as an extraordinary coincidence of events, that amidst so many islands, and so widely dispersed, he should happen to anchor at the identical one, which had so recently been visited by a rival nation.

They found a few cabbage-trees on this island; and some wild boars were seen, but none of them could be taken. A few pigeons were shot, the plumage of which was beautifully varied with green and gold. One of the most extraordinary animal productions, however, was an insect, the body and wings of which were of such a wonderful texture, that they so nearly resembled the leaf of a tree, as scarcely to be distinguished from it. When the wings were extended, each formed a semi-leaf, and when closed, it was entire. This is commonly called the leaf insect. It was preserved in spirits, and deposited in the cabinet of the King of France.

The necessary repairs of the vessels were carried on with the utmost expedition, and an equal division was made of the remaining slender stock of provisions. From the commodore to the humblest person on board, all fared alike: their necessities, like death, banished all distinctions.

On the 13th, they had an opportunity of viewing an eclipse of the solar luminary, and of making the proper nautical and astronomical remarks. The name of Port Prassin was given to the harbour where the ships anchored.

While they lay here, a sailor, in hauling the *seine*, was bit by a poisonous shark; but fortunately cured in a few hours by a profuse perspiration,

tion, produced by swallowing flower-de-luce water, and Venice treacle.

Aotourou having remarked the progress of the cure, intimated, that at Otaheite there were sea-snakes, whose bite is constantly mortal. We do not remember, however, to have read that any of our voyagers saw those dangerous reptiles.

On the 22d, they felt repeated concussions of the earth for the space of two minutes. The sea rose and fell with great agitation, which extended as far as the ships.

Though the weather was uniformly bad, different parties traversed the island in search of pigeons and fruits. At last they discovered some mango apples, and a kind of pruen. A species of ivy was successfully applied in the cure of the scurvy. May not almost every kind of vegetable have the same effect?

In one part of this island an immense cascade was seen falling from numerous rocks into a hundred basins of water, at once shaded and adorned by stately trees, some of which grew even in the reservoirs.

The situation of the ship's companies now became so deplorable, that no time was to be lost. A favourable breeze springing up on the 24th, they put the ships to sea.

M. Bougainville remarks, that this country must be New Britain, and that their station must have been the same with what Dampier calls St. George's Bay, though that adventurer had the good fortune to land on a part of it where the natives supplied his wants. A succession of *islands* having been seen in the offing, they were *named* after the officers of the ships,

Tr

The field tents were now cut up to repair the seamen's clothes ; and at this period, their scanty allowance of bread was obliged to be still farther reduced. Their salt provisions were become nauseous to a high degree, yet their starving situation rendered them palatable. Amidst all their distresses, no one gave way to despondency ; and the common men, influenced by the example of their officers, employed every evening in dancing, which was no less salutary to health than conducive to the amusement of the mind.

New Britain continued in view till the beginning of August, when the ships being near land, several Indian canoes came off. The crews were tall and active, and wore nothing but a few leaves round their middle. They held out something like bread, and invited the French to land ; but though they accepted some presents, it was impossible to conciliate their confidence so far as to prevail on them to come on board.

The following day, a large number of the natives assembled round the Boudeuse ; and one of them, who appeared to be a person of some authority, bore a red staff, knobbed at each end. On approaching the ship, he held his hand over his head for a considerable space. The French, in vain, tried to gain the good will of these people. They eagerly grasped at what was given them ; but made no return. A few yams were all that could be procured from them.

On the 31st, a number of canoes attacked the Etoile with a volley of stones and arrows ; but a single discharge of musketry put them to flight.

On the 4th of August, they saw two islands, supposed to be the same as are named Matthias and Stormy Islands by Dampier. On the 7th

they descried a flat island, abounding with coconut trees, which appeared to be well inhabited. The following day they fell in with a cluster of small islands, to get clear of which they experienced many and great dangers.

Coasting along, they afterwards came in sight of two lofty peaks, to which they gave the appellation of the Two Cyclops. A few days after, they made an attempt to land; but a party sent out in a boat reporting, that the spot afforded no vegetables fit for food, they desisted from the attempt.

From the rippling of a strong tide, it was discovered that there were breakers ahead; and the ship actually passed over them, though without much danger or damage.

At this time no less than forty of the crews were afflicted with the scurvy, of which M. Denys, first master of the *Boudeuse*, died, greatly regretted by his companions. The liberal use of wine and lemonade assisted to mitigate the severity of this cruel disorder.

Still surrounded with islands, they now steered a southerly course, and at last got out of the labyrinth, through a channel about three leagues wide. The islands which formed it, they denominated the French Passage.

On the 27th, several other islands were seen to the south-west, when M. Bougainville gave orders for a boat, from the *Etoile*, to steer in quest of anchorage, and to examine the produce. On two of these isles they landed, but had no reason to suppose they were inhabited, when at last an Indian made up to the boat, and by signs was made to understand that they wanted refreshments.

This man presented them with a farinaceous substance and some water, for which he received a handkerchief and a looking glass, and some other trinkets, at which he seemed to laugh, as thinking them beneath his notice; from whence it was concluded, that he had had some intercourse with the Dutch settlements in the vicinity, called the Seven Islands, which, by earthquakes, are now reduced to five.

On the last day of this month the commodore discovered the Isle of Ceram. This place is partly cultivated, and partly in a state of nature. It is very mountainous. A number of fires indicated that it was well peopled.

Early in the morning of the 1st of September, our voyagers found themselves at the entrance of a bay, where they saw several fires. Soon after they discovered two boats under sail. On this he imprudently hoisted Dutch colours and fired a gun; but as the natives of Ceram were at variance with the Dutch, this frustrated his design.

Thus disappointed, he returned to the bay; and the following night a number of fires attracted their attention to the island of Boero, where the Dutch have a factory well provided with the necessary refreshments.

This factory is at the entrance of the gulph of Cajeli, which the French approached at dawn. The joy on this occasion is not to be described; for at this time more than one half of the crews were unfit for duty, and scarcely a man was quite free from the scurvy. The little provision *they had on board was absolutely rotten, and the smell was become intolerable.*

Thus circumstanced, it may be well supposed, their change of prospects was peculiarly grateful. The breeze wafted fragrance from the Moluccas, and recreated their senses. "The aspect," says our author, "of a pretty large town, and of ships at anchor, the cattle grazing on the meadows, and the general fertility of the scene, caused transports, which I have felt, but cannot describe."

M. Bougainville hoisted Dutch colours and fired a gun; but though several boats were in the vicinity, none of them came along-side him. In a short time, however, a piragua, rowed by Indians, advanced towards the ship; but none of them would come on board. Notwithstanding this, the commodore proceeded under full sail, and in the afternoon anchored opposite the factory.

Some Dutch soldiers, one of whom spoke French, now came on board the *Boudeuse*, demanding the reason of her entering the port in defiance of the exclusive right the Dutch East India Company possessed of that privilege. He was answered, that necessity alone drove them to that step; that hunger must preclude the force of treaties; and that they would depart immediately, as their wants were supplied.

The soldiers departing, soon returned with a copy of the peremptory orders of government against admitting any foreign ships into the port; and desiring a written statement of the reasons on which they had been induced to transgress it. This request being complied with, all difficulties were at an end; and the resident having performed his duty as an officer, was anxious to discharge the superior duties of humanity. The
commodore

commodore and his officers were invited to sup with him on shore, an invitation they gladly accepted.

The resident and his friends beheld with equal pleasure and surprise the effects that hunger had on the appetites of the guests, nor were they willing to taste the repast till their visitants were fully satisfied. The commodore says he enjoyed this treat the more, as he had previously sent supplies on board for his starving men.

A contract was now made for a liberal supply of animal food, and rice in room of bread. The resident also humanely furnished them with what pulse could be spared from the company's garden. The sick were lauded, and indulged with the privilege of walking about, for the restoration of their health.

To relieve his men, the slaves, belonging to the company, were hired to fill the water-casks, and to convey the provisions on board.

This island is described as a delightful assemblage of woods, hills, plains, and well cultivated vales. The town of Cajeli and a few Indian buildings form the settlement. A stone fort, which the Dutch had originally erected, was accidentally blown up in 1689; since which time it is inclosed with palisadoes, and has a battery of six small cannon. About fifty white people reside on the island, one half of whom are military, under the command of the president. The negroes, who reside in the interior, subsist by the cultivation of rice.

The natives of this country, who adopt the protection of the Dutch, are inspired with a jealous dread of all foreigners. The Alfourians, however, a class of aborigines, maintain unlimit-

ed freedom and perfect independence, among the mountains in the inland parts.

The chief products of the island are black and white ebony, pepper, pine apples, citrons, lemons, oranges, bananas, and cocoa-nuts. Sago is also produced here, and excellent barley. The feathered race are numerous and beautiful. Among the quadrupeds is a wild cat, with a bag under its belly for the conveyance of its young. Bats and serpents are of an enormous size; some of the latter are mortally venomous. Crocodiles of astonishing magnitude reside on the banks of the rivers, devouring such beasts as come in their way, and the human race are only protected from their fury by carrying torches. M. Bougainville asserts, that these ferocious creatures have been known to seize people in their boats.

The Dutch resident, at Boero, lives in great elegance and splendor. Our author speaks of his politeness and hospitality in terms of the highest panegyric. After having twice received the French officers with a ceremonious respect, he bid adieu to the restraint of forms, and bid them welcome at all hours, as if his table had been their own.

The house of this gentleman is constructed in the Chinese taste, in the middle of a garden intersected by a river, and is handsomely furnished. The approach to this mansion is through a beautiful avenue of trees, which descend to the sea-side.

The astonishment of Aotourou, at the first sight of an European settlement, is not to be described. He regarded every object with the most intense curiosity, and was highly delighted with the hospitality of the Dutch, supposing that every thing
was

was freely given, because he was unacquainted with money as a medium of exchange.

M. Bougainville says, that his Otaheitean did not neglect to give the Dutch an intimation of the consequence he was of in his own country; and that his present voyage was merely to enjoy the pleasure of a society which he loved. He imitated the French modes to the utmost. His knees being distorted, he thought the Dutch resident undervalued him on that account, and actually requested some of the seamen to press their weight on his limbs, to render them straight. This circumstance, however, gives us no very exalted idea of his understanding. It seems both the English and the French were rather unfortunate in the specimens they exhibited in Europe of the natives of that delicious spot. Perhaps it may be alleged that none but fools would leave it!

Aotourou would frequently enquire of his friends, if Paris was as grand a place as Boero. He seemed to think this, compared with what he had been accustomed to, was the *ne plus ultra* of splendor and civilization.

Though the French were only six days on shore, the salubrity of the air had so far invigorated them, that, with the assistance of the fresh supplies laid in, it was thought very possible to complete their recovery at sea. Accordingly the sick were conveyed to the ships in the morning of the 7th, and towards evening, they weighed anchor, and soon got clear of the gulph of Cajeli.

Having coasted several islands, on the 9th, they had sight of Xullabessic, where the Dutch have a factory named Cleverblad. Here is a garrison of twenty-five men, under the discipline of a sergeant.

grant, and commanded by a writer to the Dutch East India Company.

On the morning of the 11th, they had sight of the island of Wawoni, and soon after they descried Bouton, the straits of which they entered the following day. Here they observed a square-built vessel, ranging the shore, with a piragua in tow. The French ships were no sooner observed by this vessel, than she endeavoured to conceal herself behind a small island. It appeared that she was a pirate, and that whatever prisoners she took, were sold for slaves.

Sailing past a beautiful port in the isle of Celebes, they enjoyed an enchanting view of a country delightfully variegated with mountains, hills, and valleys, and clothed with an exuberance of verdure. Soon after, passing the island of Pangasani, the ships were surrounded by canoes, bringing paroquets, cockatoos, various other birds and fowls, eggs, and fruits, which they exchanged for knives, or Dutch coin. These people were natives of Bouton, had a brown complexion, ordinary features, and were low in stature. They profess the Mahometan faith, and speak the same language as is common in the Moluccas. They seemed honest, though expert traders. They had some nutmegs in their possession, which they said they procured from Ceram and Banda.

The coast of Pangasani is described as rising in the form of an amphitheatre from the shore, which is probably inundated at particular seasons, as the habitations of the natives are built on the slopes of the hills. The people of Bouton consider those of Pangasani as freebooters; and each party is constantly provided against the at-
tacks

tacks of the other, by a dagger, stuck in the girdle.

On the 14th, a number of piraguas furrounded the Boudeuse, and one shewed Dutch colours. It appeared that this boat belonged to one of the chiefs of the country, to whom, by way of pre-eminence, they had granted the privilege of a flag.

Next day M. Bougainville engaged an Indian pilot, but the weather being uncommonly favourable, his services might have been dispensed with. Soon, however, the winds and tides being adverse, the ships came to an anchor, when the piraguas came off in great numbers, bringing cottons and a variety of refreshments.

Getting clear of the narrow pass, they anchored in Bouton Bay. The Indian pilot shewed a disposition to be as serviceable as possible; but he seemed little acquainted with the European art of navigation. This person and another Indian drank plentifully of what brandy was given them, but absolutely refused to taste the ships provisions, eating only bananas and betel.

As the ships were under sail from Bouton Bay, the Indians came off with abundance of fruits, poultry, and eggs, which they sold at such moderate rates, that even the common mariners could furnish themselves with refreshments in plenty.


Among the rest of their visitors were five orankays, or chiefs of Bouton, who arrived in a boat of the European form, with Dutch colours hoisted at the poop. These people were dressed in jackets and long trowsers; they wore turbans, and each had a silver-headed cane, as a badge of consequence. They presented the commodore with a roe-buck, and were complimented in re-

turn with some silk stuffs. They professed a great partiality for the French nation, and drank the health of his Most Christian Majesty in such plentiful bumpers of potent liquor, that they were obliged to be assisted into their vessel.

The Indian pilot having communicated to the commodore, that the south-east wind uniformly blew freshest about noon, he availed himself of this intelligence, which he found exactly true, and got out to sea without difficulty. This peculiarity in the wind is a circumstance well known to the natives; and it was observed, that all their boats retired before the sun reached the meridian.

After passing the isle of Saleyor, where the Dutch have a kind of resident, on the 18th they discovered land in different directions, which they called North Island, South Island, and the Isle of Passage. By day-light, next morning, they were in sight of the coast of Celebes, which is described as one of the most luxuriant spots in the oriental seas. Immense herds of cattle graze the plains, which are sprinkled with groves, while the coast is one continued plantation of the cocoa-nut tree. The champaign parts are mostly cultivated and covered with houses; while the mountains behind them add dignity and ornament to the landscape.

This day M. Bougainville chased a Malayan boat, in hopes of obtaining a pilot; but they fled at his approach, and escaped. It was supposed she mistook the *Boudeuse* for a Dutch ship. It seems the generality of the people on the coast are pirates, who are always enslaved, when they fall into the hands of the Dutch.



In the afternoon of the 22d, the north-east coast of Madura was descried at a great distance. On the succeeding morn, four ships were seen, two of which hoisted Dutch colours. One of them proved to be a snow from Malacca, bound for Japara.

The commodore now coasted Java, the shore of which is level, but the mountains rise to a vast height. Proceeding in some apprehension lest they should overshoot the port of Batavia, on the morning of the 27th, they had sight of the church of that town, on which they steered directly for the road, where they anchored with the pleasing reflection, that after all their dangers, they were now in a fair way of a safe arrival in Europe.

M. Bougainville was soon visited, as usual, by a Dutch officer; but as he had previously sent a messenger to wait on the governor, he declined giving this deputy any answer till he knew the result of his own dispatches. It appeared that the governor was at his country seat, about nine miles from the town; but the sabandar promised to introduce the commodore to his excellency next morning.

Owing to the heat of the climate, journies are always performed early. Accordingly M. Bougainville set out with the sabandar soon after day break; and on reaching the governor's palace, met with a reception equally sincere and obliging. This chief, whose power extends so far and whose splendor is so great, as a proof of the humanity of his own disposition, applauded the conduct of the resident at Boero in his treatment of the French during the period of signal distress.

The sick were allowed to be landed and lodged in the hospital, and the necessary supplies were to be furnished, under the direction of the *sabandar*. After these arrangements, it was agreed on to salute the fort with fifteen guns, which compliment was returned with an equal number.

The officers having disposed of the sick, now took lodgings for themselves; and soon after fixed a day for paying a visit of ceremony to the governor at Jacatra, his country seat. After this, they paid their respects to the rear admiral, who is always a member of the regency, and lives with a degree of splendor that would not disgrace a prince.

M. Bougainville mentions the theatre of Batavia, as an elegant building. Of the performances he could not judge, from his ignorance of the language. The same difficulty attended him when he viewed the Chinese comedies. Exclusive of these regular exhibitions, we are told that pantomimes are daily performed on scaffolds, in the Chinese quarter of this city. It is a peculiarity in the Chinese comedy, that all the male characters should be represented by females.

Our author gives a very partial description of Batavia. He says the neatness is all Dutch, the magnificence all Parisian. M. Mohr, we are told, a clergyman of this place, distinguished for his immense wealth and his extensive knowledge, has erected, in the gardens of one of his country houses, one of the most superb observatories in the world, and has furnished it with the best instruments of European artists. This gentleman, M. Bougainville adds, "is doubtless the richest of all the children of Urania."

The houses in Batavia are only one story high, on account of the frequency of the earthquakes which visit this place; but the opulence of the inhabitants is sufficiently marked by the magnificent taste in which they are furnished. This place, however, is visibly on the decline; but it will always be of consequence, from the refined policy of the Dutch, which renders it difficult for a person, after having accumulated wealth here, to transmit it to Europe.

The distinction of rank is observed with the most minute attention at Batavia, and etiquette is never dispensed with. The gradation of precedence is as follows: the high regency, the court of justice, the ecclesiastics, the company's servants, the naval and military officers. From the court of justice there is no appeal; and some years ago, this court sentenced to death a governor of Ceylon, who had been convicted of the most infamous malversation in his government.

If any of the native sovereigns of Java offend against the established Dutch policy, they are put to death in the most inhuman manner. On these melancholy occasions, the unhappy victims are dressed in white; and though decapitation is esteemed an honourable kind of punishment, it must never be inflicted here, from a prevalent opinion among the natives, that the loss of the head in the other world would be productive of an eternity of woe. Hence, though the aboriginal inhabitants submit to have their princes taken off, sometimes on slender pretences, by the cruelest means, beheading them would infallibly excite a revolt.

The several chiefs of the different districts of Java, are surrounded with Dutch guards, so that

they are only nominally possessed of sovereign power. However, they are useful agents to the Dutch, and therefore are tolerated in the exercise of such privileges as do not interfere with the superior rights which the company have assumed.

Before the expiration of ten days from their arrival, every officer of the *Boudeuse* began to experience the fatal effects of the climate; and at length Aotourou felt its pestiferous influence; and nothing but the readiness with which he submitted to medical advice, could have saved him from the consequences of the contagion. For a long time after he left Batavia, he distinguished it by the expressive appellation of *Enoua Maté*, "the land which kills."

Every requisite preparation being made, the ships sailed from thence on the 16th of October, 1768, and, in three days, cleared the Straights of Sunda. By this time all the crew were perfectly cured of the scurvy; but some few were still affected with the dysentery and bloody flux.

On the 20th, the ships came in sight of the *Isle of France*, and on the 8th of November, the *Boudeuse* anchored in port, and next day the *Etoile*, which had unavoidably been left behind, came in. Here the ships were repaired; and the commodore discharged several persons who were desirous of adding to the numbers already in that colony. Our author, on this occasion, expresses the happiness he felt in being enabled, after so tedious a voyage, to enrich this isle with inhabitants and necessaries; but laments, in the most pathetic terms, the loss of the *Chevalier de Bouchage*, and an ensign on board his ship, whose abilities as an officer were only surpassed by his virtues and accomplishments as a man.

M. Bou-

M. Bougainville sailed from the Isle of France on the 12th of December, leaving the Etoile behind him, to receive some farther repairs, in consequence of which she arrived in France a month later than the commodore.

Without encountering any singular event, the adventurers had sight of the Cape of Good Hope, on the 18th of January, and next morning dropped anchor in Table Bay. M. Bougainville omits the description of this celebrated place, which is so often and accurately described by other voyagers; one circumstance, however, he records as a natural curiosity, that they killed that scarce quadruped, named the Giraffe, which measured seventeen feet in length, and took the young one alive, which was seven feet long. "None of these," says our author, "had been seen after that which was brought to Rome in the time of Cæsar, and exhibited in the amphitheatre."

They sailed from the Cape on the 27th, and arrived off St. Helena on the 4th of February, where, after a delay of two days only, they proceeded on their voyage to France. On the 25th, the commodore fell in with the English ship, the *Swallow*, commanded by Captain Carteret, as previously mentioned, which vessel had been engaged in a voyage for similar purposes.

From this time little happened deserving notice, till they had sight of the isle of Ushant; when a violent gale of wind had almost blasted all the hopes of so propitious a voyage. The commodore, however, bore away for St. Maloes, which port he fortunately entered, after an absence of two years and four months from his native land; during which period he buried no more than seven of his crew, in all the vicissitudes

tudes of climate and the variety of dangers he had run through.

When Aotourou was brought to Paris, great pains were taken to instruct him; but after being nearly two years in the society of Frenchmen, he could articulate but few words of their language, partly owing to the natural defect of his organs, and partly to his being nearly thirty years of age before he was initiated in habits of study.

Though this stranger was thus deficient in the language, the streets of Paris were perfectly familiar to him. He frequently bought such articles as he fancied, and seldom suffered himself to be imposed on. None of the public entertainments seemed to have any charms for him, save the opera; and thither he regularly resorted, attracted by his predilection for dancing.

He was extremely grateful for favours shewn, and never forgot the person who had conferred an obligation on him. The Duchess of Choiseul was the first in the list of his friends; and he expressed more gratitude for the polite attentions with which she treated him, than even for the numerous presents he received at her hands; and whenever he heard of her arrival in Paris, he immediately repaired to her house to pay his respects.

After a residence of eleven months at Paris, this exotic was put on board the *Brissón*, at Rochelle, which was destined to convey him to his native country. On this new adventure, M. Bougainville laid out one thousand five hundred pounds sterling, and the Dutchess of Choiseul ordered a considerable sum to be expended in *cattle, feeds, implements of husbandry, and other articles for the improvement of the island of Otaheite.*

To conclude, M. Bougainville, in the skill with which he conducted this expedition, displayed great abilities as an officer ; and the many valuable remarks and reflections which he has interspersed in the course of his voyage, shew him to have been possessed of a philosophic and liberal mind, an accurate observer, and a man qualified to advance the honour and reputation of his country.

VOYAGE



VOYAGE
OF THE HONOURABLE
CAPTAIN PHIPPS,
TOWARDS THE NORTH POLE,
WITH A BRIEF VIEW OF THE ATTEMPTS AT DIS-
COVERING A NORTH-EAST PASSAGE TO
CHINA AND JAPAN.

TURNING from the fascinating descriptions of some of the new discoveries in the South Seas, before we enter on the voyages of our immortal countryman, Cook, we shall attend Commodore Phipps, afterwards Lord Mulgrave, in his expedition towards the North Pole; the narration of which will properly be introduced by some account of what other navigators had done or suffered, in the same track, and in the same course.

In the contention between powers, equally formed by nature to meet an opposition, it may be glorious to overcome; but to encounter raging seas, tremendous rocks, and bulwarks of solid ice, and desperately to persist in attempts, to prevail against such formidable enemies; as the conflict is hopeless, so the event is certain. The hardiest and most skillful navigator, after exposing himself

a North-east Passage to China and Japan

The first who attempted this discovery was Hugh Willoughby, with three ships, for the year 1553, the era of perilous enterprise. This gentleman sailed to the latitude of 68° north, within sight, as it is imagined, of Greenland, now called Spitzbergen; but a storm was driven back, and obliged to winter in the river Arzena, in Lapland, where he was frozen to death with all his company. Upon his table a concise account of all his adventures, in which he mentions, having sailed in sight of a country in a very high latitude, about which geographers are divided; first affirming, that it could be no other than Greenland, afterwards discovered, and named by the Dutch Spitzbergen; others, that what he saw was only a fogbank; and of this last opinion is Captain Wood, an able navigator, whom we shall have occasion to speak hereafter.

Sammoyds: and having passed the easternmost point of that straight, arrived at an open sea, whence he returned, having, as he imagined, discovered the passage so painfully sought, and so ardently desired. Some affirm, his discoveries extended beyond the 80th degree of latitude, to a country altogether desolate, where the mountains were blue and the valleys snow.

Be that as it may, the favourable report of Captain Burroughs encouraged Queen Elizabeth to fit out two stout vessels to perfect the discovery. The command of these ships was given to the Captains Jackman and Pett, who, in 1580, failed through the same straight, that had been discovered by Burroughs, and entered the eastern sea; where the ice poured in so fast upon them, and the weather became so tempestuous, that after enduring incredible hardships, and sustaining the most dreadful shocks of ice and seas, terrible even in the relation, they were driven back and separated; and neither Pett nor his ship or crew were ever heard of afterwards.

After this disaster and disappointment, the desire of visiting the frozen seas to the north-east, began to abate among the English; but was assumed by the Dutch with an obstinate perseverance, peculiar to that phlegmatic nation. The first Dutchman we read of who made the attempt, was John Cornelius, of whose voyage, in 1595, we have but a very imperfect account; he was followed, however, in 1606, by William Barrans, or Barents, an able and experienced seaman and mathematician, who being supplied with every necessary for so hazardous a voyage, by the generosity and patronage of Prince Maurice, proceeded in the same course which had been pointed

montains and head lands, and planned to a new course to steer, by which he hope to accomplish what he had failed in discovering following the steps of those who had gone before him.

In 1607, animated rather than discouraged by disappointment, he entered upon his second voyage, with the spirit of a man fully prepared with success. He had heard, that some whalers, who had now begun to frequent the North Seas, had, either by design or accident, advanced much farther to the northward than those who had been purposely fitted out for discoveries; he therefore determined to proceed to the Northward of Nova Zembla, till he arrived at the height of the pole, under which he was persuaded he should find an open sea by changing his course to the southward, to avoid those obstructions which had retarded his progress to the north-east.


In this hope he continued till he arrived

experience greater misery than those underwent, who perished in the attempt. They were obliged to winter in a country, where no living creature besides themselves, appeared to have existence; and where, notwithstanding their utmost efforts to preserve their bodies from the cold, the flesh perished upon the bones of some of them, and others died of the most excruciating pains.

In this extremity, and notwithstanding the anguish they endured, those who survived had still the fortitude and ingenuity, to frame a pin-nace from the wreck of their broken ship, in which, at the approach of summer, they made sail for Lapland; but before they arrived at Colu, their captain died, and with him the hopes of perfecting his discovery.

It was now the active season for naval enterprizes. Private adventurers began to fit out ships for the North Seas. Innumerable sea animals had been observed to bask upon the ice; the tusks of whose jaws were found to excel, in whiteness, the finest ivory, and their carcases to yield plenty of excellent oil. In the infancy of the whale fishery, these were pursued with the same eagerness, with which both the English and Dutch endeavour, at this day, to make the whales their prey, and perhaps with no less profit. In following these, many islands were discovered to which they resorted, and, in course of time, the seas that were so formidable to the first discoverers, became frequented at the proper seasons by the ships of every nation.

Foreign navigators, however, were more sanguine in their notions of a north-west passage, than of the existence of a passage to the north-east; and it was not till many unsuccessful trials



couraged by the misadvices of others, fatal issue that had attended their obstin-
severance, on viewing the face of the
examining the currents, and traversing
monse continent of ice, that stretched a
ocean, in a direction from east south-east
north-west, he concluded that no passage
be practicable in that direction, and he
returned without making any other disco-
covery.

From that time till the year 1676, the
tion of this discovery was totally neglected
the English; and though the Dutch whalers
ed the world with wonderful relations
near approach to the pole, yet little credit
given to their reports, till the arrival of our
Wood, who had accompanied Sir John
rough in his voyage to the South Sea.

This able and enterprising navigator
himself an excellent mathematician and
other, and reading in the Philosophical T

the glory of his majesty's reign, and immensely to the wealth and prosperity of his kingdoms.

Many about the court, hoping to share in the profits of the voyage, were earnest in prevailing with his majesty to forward the design, who, being himself fond of novelty, ordered the Speedwell frigate to be fitted out at his own charge, manned, victualled, and provided with every necessary; while the duke, his brother, and seven other courtiers, joined in the purchase of a pink of one hundred and twenty tons, to accompany her, which they likewise manned and victualled, and furnished with merchandizes, such as were thought marketable on the coasts of Tartary or Japan; the countries they hoped to reach.

These ships being in readiness, and commissions made out for their commanders, Captain Wood was appointed to direct the expedition, on board the Speedwell, and Captain Flawes to bear him company on board the Prosperous.

On the 28th of May, 1676, they sailed from the Buoy of the Nore; and on the 4th of June cast anchor off Lerwick, in Brassefey Sound, where they continued six days, to take in water and recruit their stores,

On Saturday the 10th, they weighed anchor continued their voyage; and on the 15th they entered the polar circle, where the sun at that season of the year never sets, The weather now began to grow hazy, a circumstance that frequently happens in the polar regions, and darkens the air with the obscurity of night.

From this time till June 22d, when they fell in with the ice, in latitude 75 deg. 59 min. north, nothing material occurred. On that day, at noon, they observed a continent of ice stretching to an

imperceptible distance, in a direction from east-south-east and west-north-west. They bore away along the ice till the 28th, when they found it join to the land of Nova Zembla.

On the 29th, they stood away to the south, to get clear of the ice; but unfortunately found themselves embayed in it. At eleven at night, the Prosperous bore down upon the Speedwell, crying out, ice upon the weather-bow, on which the Speedwell endeavoured to ware; but before she could be brought to on the other tack, she struck on a ledge of rocks, and stuck fast. They fired guns of distress, but were not heard, and the fog being so thick, that land could not be discerned, though close to the stern of their ship; no relief was now to be expected, but from Providence and their own endeavours. In such a situation, no description can equal the relation of the captain himself, who, in the language of the times, has given the following full and pathetic account.

“Here, says he, we lay beating upon the rock in a most frightful manner, for the space of three or four hours, using all possible means to save the ship, but in vain; for it blew so hard, that it was wholly out of our power to carry out an anchor capable to do us any service. At length we saw land close under our stern, to the great amazement of us all, which before we could not see for the foggy weather; so I commanded the men to get out the boats, which was done. I sent the boatswain towards the shore in the pinnace, to see if there was any possibility of landing, which I much feared. In half an hour he returned with this answer, that it was impossible to land a man, the snow being in high cliffs, the shore was inac-
cessible.”

cessible. This was bad tidings; so then it was high time to think on the safety of our souls, and we went altogether to prayers, to beseech God to have mercy on us, for now nothing but individual ruin appeared before our eyes. After prayers, the weather cleared up a little, and looking over the stern, I saw a small beach directly with the stern of the ship, where I thought there might be some chance of getting on shore. I therefore sent off the pinnace a second time, with some men in her to be first landed, but she durst not venture to attempt the beach. I then ordered out the long-boat, with twenty men to land, who attempted it, and got safe on shore. Those in the pinnace followed, and landed their men likewise, and both vessels returned to the ship without any accident. The men on shore desired some fire-arms and ammunition, for there were many bears in sight. I therefore ordered two barrels of powder, some small-arms, some provisions, with my own papers and money, to be put on board the pinnace; but as she put off from the ship's side, a sea overfet her, so that all was lost, with the life of one man, and several others taken up for dead. The pinnace likewise was dashed to pieces, to our great sorrow, as by that disaster, one means of escaping from this dismal country, in case the Prosperous deserted us, was cut off. The long-boat being on board, the boatswain and some others, would compel me and the lieutenant to leave the ship, saying it was impossible for her to live long in that sea, and that they had rather be drowned than I; but desiring me when I came on shore, if it were possible, to send the boat again for them. Before we got half way to shore, the ship overfet; so, making all possible haste to

land the men we had on board, I went off to the ship again, to save those poor men who had been so kind to me before. With great hazard I got to the quarter of the ship, and they came down the ladder into the boat, only one man was left behind for dead, who had before been cast away in the pinnace; so I returned to the shore. We then hauled up the boat, and went up the land about a flight shot, where our men were making a fire and and a tent with canvass and oars, which we had saved for that purpose, in which we all lay that night wet and weary. The next morning the man we left on board having recovered, got upon the mizen-mast, and prayed to be taken on shore; but it blew so hard, and the sea ran so high, that though he was a very pretty sailor, none would venture to bring him off.

The weather continuing blowing with extreme fogs, and with frost and snow, and all the ill-compacted weather, that could be imagined, put together, we built more tents to preserve ourselves; and the ship breaking to pieces, came all on shore to the same place where we landed, which served us for shelter and firing. Besides, there came to us some hogsheds of flour, and brandy in good store, which was no little comfort in our great extremity. We now lay between hope and despair, praying for fair weather, that Captain Flaws might find us; but fearing at the same time that he might be cast away as well as we.

But supposing we never were to see him again, I was resolved to try the utmost to save as many as I could in the long-boat. In order thereunto we raised her two feet, and laid a deck upon her; and with this boat, and thirty men, for she would carry no more, I intended to row and sail to

Ruthie

Russia, but the crew not being satisfied who should be the men, began to be very unruly in their mind and behaviour, every one having as much reason to save himself as another, some holding consultation to save the boat, and all to run the like fortune; but here brandy was our best friend, for it kept the men always fox'd, so that in all their designs I could prevent them. Some were in the mind to go by land, but that I knew was impossible for any man; and as no passage by sea could be attempted till forty men were destroyed, I will leave it to the consideration of any, whether we were not in a most deplorable condition, without the interposition of Divine Providence.

The weather continued still very bad, with fogs, snow, rain, and frost, till the ninth day of our being on shore, which was the 8th day of July, when in the morning it cleared up, and to our great joy, one of our people cried out a sail, which proved Captain Flawes; so we set fire to our town, that he might see where we were, which he presently discovered, so came up, and sent his boat to us; and by twelve o'clock we all got safe on board, but left all on shore that we had saved from the ship; for we much feared it would prove foggy again, and that we should be driven once more on this miserable country; which is for the most part, covered perpetually with snow, and what is bare being like bogs, on whose surface grows a kind of moss, bearing a blue and yellow flower, the whole product of the earth in this desolate region. Under the surface, about two feet deep, we came to a firm body of ice, a thing never heard of before; and against the ice-cliffs, which are as high as either

contradict the report of former navigators, that the sea is there saltier than he had yet elsewhere, and the clearest in the world; he could see the shells at the bottom, the sea was four hundred and eighty feet deep.

Being all embarked on board the *Prize*, on the 9th of July they changed their course, and steered for England; and, on the 23d of August, they arrived safe in the Thames, without any remarkable accident intervening.

After the miscarriage of this voyage, the highest expectations had been formed by most experienced navigators in England, that a passage by the north, or east, had no existence. They were therefore confirmed in this error, for an error it is, by the reasons assigned by Captain Wood, for changing his opinion on this matter; for, before he made the discovery, he was fully persuaded that there was no passage, and likewise persuaded many others, that

ning a certain distance, to find an opening into the Polar Ocean ; but after running two or three glasses to the northward in one bay, he found himself entangled in another ; and thus it continued till his ship was wrecked. By this experiment, he found the opinion of Barents confuted, namely, " that by steering the middle course between Spitsbergen and Nova Zembla, an open sea might be attained, in which a ship might safely sail as far as the pole." From his own experience, he therefore pronounced, that all the Dutch relations were forgeries which asserted, that any man had ever been under the pole ; verily believing, that if there be no land to the northward of 80 deg. that the sea is there frozen, and always continues so ; and grounding his opinion upon this remark, that if the body of ice which he saw, were to be conveyed ten degrees more to the southward, many centuries of years would elapse before it would be melted.

To this positive assertion, however, may be opposed, the testimony of many credible persons, some of whom have themselves sailed beyond the 80th degree of north latitude, and others, upon evidence, whose veracity there is no reasonable cause to bring in question.

Among the latter, we meet with this singular relation of Mr. Joseph Moxon, a member of the Royal Society.

" Being, about twenty years ago, in Amsterdam, says he, I went into a public house to drink a cup of beer for my thirst ; and sitting by the public fire, among several people, there happened a seaman to come in, who seeing a friend of his there, who he knew went the Greenland voyage, wondered to see him, because it was not yet

north pole, and came back again. We says Moxon, I entered into discourse w and seemed to question the truth of what but he did assure me it was true, and that was then in Amsterdam, and many of th belonging to her, ready to justify the tru and told me, moreover, that they had fa degrees beyond the pole. I asked him, found no land or islands about the pole i swered, no; there was a free and open asked him, if they did not meet with a g of ice? He told me no; they saw no i the pole. I asked him what weather t there? He told me, fine warm weather, was at Amsterdam in the summer time. hot. I should have asked him more q but that he was engaged in discourse friend, and I could not, in modesty, i them longer. But I believe the steersma truth; for he seemed a plain, honest, and

elevation, might invigorate that part of the hemisphere with more heat than he does our climate, when he is, in the winter, no more than fifteen degrees at the highest, and but eight hours above the horizon ; in which space the earth has time to cool, and to lose, in the night, the influences of heat which it receives in the day.

Another report, upon like evidence, was made to King Charles II. by Captain Goulden, who, being a Greenland whaler himself, spoke with two Hollanders in the North Seas, that had sailed within one degree of the pole, where they met with no ice, but a hollow grown sea, like that in the Bay of Biscay.

A still more credible testimony is, that about the year 1670, application being made to the States General for a charter to incorporate a company of merchants to trade to Japan and China, by a new passage to the north-east, the then East India Company opposed it, and that so effectually, that their High Mightinesses refused to grant what the merchants requested.

At that time it was talked of in Holland, as a matter of no difficulty to sail to Japan by the way of Greenland ; and it was publicly asserted and believed, that several Dutch ships had actually done it. The merchants being required to verify this fact, desired that the journals of the Greenland Squadron of 1655 might be produced ; in seven of which there was notice taken of a ship, which that year had sailed as high as the latitude of 89 ; and three journals of that ship being produced, they all agreed, as to one observation taken by the master, August 1, 1655, in 88 deg. 56 min. north.

ly navigated by the Russians, and which infallibly have brought them to the coasts of China and Japan, had they persevered in the course they were pursuing.

It does not appear, however, from any authentic accounts that we can collect, that any voyage professedly for the discovery of a north-east passage, has been undertaken by either public or private adventurers in England, since the voyage of Captain Wood, in the year 1670, till the voyage we are about to relate; and it is more than probable, that if the Russian discoveries in the north of Asia had never taken place, the project of finding a practicable passage from Europe to the East in that direction, would have lain dormant for ever.

But the vast and enterprising genius of Peter the Great, in forcing his subjects out of the security in which they had long been inured, opened to the maritime powers new sources of commerce, and furnished fresh motives

With this design, he planned one of the boldest enterprises that ever entered into the heart of man; and though he did not survive to see it executed, the glory of the achievement is wholly his.

The country of Kamtschatka was as much unknown to his predecessors, as it was to the rest of the civilized nations of the earth; yet he formed the design of making that savage country the centre of the most glorious achievements.

It was in the last year of this great monarch's life, that he commissioned Captain Behring to traverse the wild, and then almost desolate, country of Siberia, and to continue his route to Kamtschatka, where he was to build one or more vessels, in order to discover whether the country towards the north, of which at that time they had no distinct knowledge, was a part of America, or not; and if it was, his instructions authorized him to endeavour, by every possible means, to seek and cultivate the acquaintance of some European people, and to learn from them the state of the country at which he should arrive. If he failed in this, he was to make such discoveries as circumstances should present, and commit to writing the result of his observations for the use of his Imperial master.

To enter minutely into the particulars of Captain Behring's journey and voyage, would carry us beyond the limits prescribed: let it suffice to say, that after surmounting incredible difficulties, and suffering hardships which none but a Russian could have survived, he executed his commission successfully, and returned to Petersburg in safety, after an absence of five years, in which time, besides his voyage by sea, he had travelled, in
Y 2 going

Captain Behring embarked on his second voyage from Kamtschatka, of which all that was known is, that he sailed southward to the isles of Japan, and from thence eastward about eighty leagues. At that distance from Japan he discovered a new island, which he coasted north-west, still approaching the north-east cape of Asia, which he reached, and named Cape Shelvghenki, not discovering any land till he arrived at the mouth of a great river, where, sending his boats, with most of his crew, on shore, they never more returned; being either killed or detained by the inhabitants. This accident made his discovery incomplete; for not being left with men sufficient to navigate the ship, he was obliged to return on shore on an uninhabited island, where the captain unfortunately died.

From this voyage, however, we learn, that the Bering sea, from the north-east cape of Kamtschatka, is open to the isles of Japan, and from a full and accurate account of Russian voyages published in

deg. east, from London, and at the approach of winter, the vessels sheltered themselves by going up the Janika, the mouth of which is marked in our maps in latitude 70 deg. north, and in longitude 82 deg. east; whence the next summer they proceeded to the mouth of the Lena, in latitude 72 deg. north, and in longitude 115 deg. into which they again retired for the winter season. The third expedition was from the mouth of this river, to the farthest north cape of Asia, in 72 deg. of north latitude, and in 172 deg. of east longitude from London. Thus the Russians having passed between the continent and Nova Zembla, and sailed as far as the easternmost north cape; and the English and Dutch having repeatedly sailed through the straits that divide Nova Zembla from the continent, nothing can be a plainer demonstration of the reality of a north-east passage, than the sum of the voyages here enumerated, when added together. The English and Dutch sail to Wygatz, or the Strait of Nova Zembla; the Russians sail from Wygatz to the North Cape of Asia; and Behring from the North Cape to Japan. This is an incontrovertible demonstration; yet it is obvious, that this course can never be practicable to ships employed in trade. The Russians, by taking the advantage of an open sea and mild weather, in three years time accomplished but part of a voyage, which, by the Cape of Good Hope, may be made in less than one. Who, therefore, would run the hazard of so desperate a passage, for the sake of reaping imaginary advantages by an intercourse with savages?

But though the passage to the northern countries of the east was known to be impracticable

the glory resulting from it, had the predominated in favour of navigation, would have been immensely great.

It must be acknowledged, to the honour of the noble lord who then presided at the head of the Admiralty Board, and who sanctioned the undertaking, that the means to be adopted were in every respect proportioned to the importance of the discovery.

The vessels that were made choice of were the properest that could be devised. Bombs are in the first instance stoutly built, being over large, are best adapted for narrow seas that are known to abound with submerged rocks: these vessels, besides their strength, were sheathed with plank of oak three inches thick, to fortify them against the shocks and pressure of the ice, that, in their progress, they must infallibly encounter. They were, besides, furnished with a double

preservation of their lives, by wise directions in equipping the ships; and supplying them with every requisite that could be thought of, to prevent the fatal effects that other voyagers had experienced from inhospitable climes and disease.

Thus equipped and provided, the command of the *Race Horse* was given to the Honourable Constantine Phipps, now Lord Mulgrave, as commodore; and that of the *Carcase* to Captain Skeffington Lutwyche; the first mounting eight six pounders and fourteen swivels, burthen three hundred and fifty tons; the latter, four six pounders and fourteen swivels, burthen three hundred tons.

On the 3d of June 1773, the commodore made the signal to weigh, and next day, being off Sheerness, they took their departure with a fresh breeze, and continued their voyage, without any material interruption or occurrence, till the 15th, when they lay to, off Brasseley Island, and purchased fish from the Shetland boats at a very cheap rate.

On the 16th, they took a new departure from Shetland; but were soon enveloped in a fog of almost pitchy darkness, during the continuance of which guns were fired and drums beat, to enable the *Carcase* to keep company, while the consort ship was obliged to repeat the signals, lest, in the deep gloom, they should run foul of each other.

When the mist vanished, they found themselves, by observation, in 60 deg. 52. min. north latitude, and immediately steered a north-east course.

Being arrived in latitude 65 deg. 9 min. north, and the cold beginning to be very sensibly felt,

the additional clothing, which had been liberally furnished by government, was delivered out to the officers and men. Next day, being the 19th, the wind varied to every point of the compass, and the commodore brought to, and spoke his consort.

On the 20th, they pursued their course to the eastward with high breezes and a clear air. They were now within the polar circle; and at midnight had an observation of the sun, and found their latitude 66 deg. 52 min. north. Here the *Race Horse* sounded with a lead of one hundred weight, and a line of seven hundred and eighty fathoms, to which was appended a thermometer of Lord George Cavendish's construction. They found no bottom; but it was ascertained, that the water was eleven degrees colder at that depth than on the surface.

The following day they had light breezes and cloudy weather, and now they first observed a whale. The commodore observing a whaling snow, with *Hamburgh* colours flying, fired a gun, and brought her to. Being homeward bound with seals, a gentleman, who had embarked on board the *Race Horse* with a view of prosecuting the voyage, being already tired of his situation, bid an adieu to his friends, and took his passage on board the *Hamburgher*, in order to return home.

On the 22d, the articles of war were read. The weather began to be piercing cold; being now in the 70th deg. of north latitude, and about 14 min. to the eastward of London. The rain poured down in streams, and froze as it fell, and the air was thick and unpleasant.

The rain continued next day ; and they heard three guns fired at a distance, but saw no ship or other object. On the 24th, the commodore changed his course to east-north-east ; and amidst fogs, gales, fleet, and piercing cold, they advanced till they found themselves in latitude 74 deg. 17 min. north.

On the 27th, they had light airs from the southward, and felt it much warmer than the preceding day. Indeed, the vicissitudes of heat and cold are much more frequent here than in the more southerly latitudes. It often changes from temperate to severe cold almost in an instant. It should seem, likewise, that in this latitude the ice frequently shifts its place ; for Captain Wood, about the same season of the year, in 1676, fell in with ice near this latitude, and found it presented an impenetrable barrier against his farther progress. His affecting shipwreck has been already related.

On the 29th, being in latitude 78 deg. north, and in longitude 6 deg. 29 min. east, they came in sight of land ; when a consultation was held concerning their future course. The appearance of the land lay from east-south-east to north-east. Falling in with the Marquis of Rockingham Greenlandman, she presented each of the ships with some venison, which was found very well flavoured, but not burthened with fat. By this ship, which had just come from the ice, they learned, that three whalers had, the day preceding, been crushed to pieces by some floats of ice suddenly closing on them.

Pursuing their course, next morning they saw Black Point, so called from its dark appearance, bearing eastward at the distance of seven or eight leagues.

100 At day, they lay to and took up a
a mountain, which they named Mount Pe
It was found three thousand nine hund
sixty feet from the level of the sea, wh
vered with snow, and at a distance resem
antique building, crowned with a turret.

The bottom of this mountain, and the
hills, have sometimes a very fiery appe
and the ice and snow on their sides, in
fantastic forms, glisten with a brilliancy t
ceeds the splendor of the brightest gems
appearance is the general prelude of a
Here they shot some sea-fowl, which had
oily taste.

July 3d, was a perfect calm. This d
spoke a Hollander, who predicted, that a
or two farther north would be the ex
their progress this season. Having double
Cold, they anchored about three miles fr
land, and sent the boats ashore for water,
they found in abundance, pouring fr

cessary to fire guns to keep company. A dreadful crackling was now heard at a distance, which proved to be the dashing and grinding of the loose pieces of ice against each other; the report of which is conveyed from a great distance.

Next day, the islands of ice began to appear, and the fog thickening, their situation became very alarming. About ten at night the commodore bore away from the ice, and soon lost sight of it; but next morning descried it again, stretching from east by south to north by east.

The weather was cloudy on the 7th, and finding themselves beset by loose fragments of ice, which gave them incessant trouble, they stood to the westward; but it was with extreme difficulty they could keep any course, for the ice came in such drifts as whirled the ships about in an astonishing manner.

Both vessels continued to be entangled by the ice on the following day, and the Carcase being driven to leeward, hoisted out her long-boat to tow up with the commodore; but the ice closing very fast, it was impossible for the boats to live. Orders were, therefore, given to stand to the southward, but the ships were unable to make head against the accumulation of ice that continually surrounded them; and, therefore, were obliged to have recourse to their ice anchors and poles. Towards evening, the ice beginning to open, they strained every nerve to extricate themselves from their perilous situation, which at last they effected, though with some loss.

It frequently happens, that ships, encompassed in this manner by the ice, perish by being dashed against the solid fields, or are crushed by the loose fragments suddenly coalescing. The
greatest

greatest danger, however, is from the loose ice; for the whalers often moor their ships in security to the solid fields of ice that seem to rest upon the earth. In such situations, it sometimes happens, that no loose ice is to be seen; yet, perhaps, in less than an hour's time, upon a change of wind, it will pour upon them with irresistible violence.

Though it is allowed, that many of the largest fields of ice are bedded in the bottom of the sea, yet it is equally certain, that they are often rent asunder by the raging billows, which produces the most terrible crash imaginable.

The excessive severity of the climate demanded all the exhilarants that the bounty of government had supplied for the comfort of the crews. Each man had now two quarts of porter and a pint of brandy for his daily allowance.

On the 10th they sailed between numberless pieces of ice, among which they saw several whales. The ice soon becoming solid and compact, they were obliged to change their course; and the discovery of a passage to the pole, in that direction, being judged impracticable in the opinion of every officer on board, and the men almost worn out with continued labour, it was resolved to extricate themselves, as soon as possible, from the dangers with which they were environed.

Next day, having with infinite toil worked out of the loose ice, they sailed along the main body which appeared perfectly solid and compact. This immense mass extended as far as the eye could reach from the masthead; but the sea was now tolerably clear. Early in the morning they saw land, which proved to be Cloven Cliff, in latitude 79 deg. 56 min. north.

On

On the evening of the 12th, being four or five miles distant from the Cliff, they founded and found a rocky bottom at fifteen fathoms; and saw several English and Dutch Greenlanders at anchor, in the Norways, as it is called, their usual place of rendezvous, for they never venture farther north. A breeze springing up, they made sail and soon saw Hacluit's head, bearing westward about six or seven leagues distant; and by noon they found themselves in 80 deg. 2 min. north.

On the following day they came to an anchor in Smearingburgh harbour, where they remained several days, to take in fresh water; during which space our journalist was employed in surveying the country, which is described as being awfully romantic, and full of mountains, precipices and rocks. Between these are hills of ice, apparently generated from the melting of the snow on the sides of those towering elevations, which, being once congealed, every season receives an accumulation of gelid matter. The eye of fancy may see a thousand fantastic figures on these hills, representing trees, castles, ruins, and the different objects in animated nature.

Of these ice hills, however, there are seven which more particularly attract notice: they are called the Seven Ice-burghs, and when the sun shines full upon them, the prospect is inconceivably brilliant, assuming all the various hues and tints that the reflection of the solar orb on their rude surfaces can convey. Their lustre is too dazzling for the eye, and the air is filled with an astonishing brightness.

Smearingburgh harbour was first discovered by the Dutch. Here they erected sheds and conven-

niences for boiling the blubber of whales, instead of carrying it home in the gross. Allured by the hopes of gain, they also built a village here, and endeavoured to settle a colony; but the first winter they all perished. The remains of their village may still be traced, and their domestic utensils, and other implements, remained in the shape of solid ice, long after the substance was decayed.

Where every thing is new, a stranger must be at a loss to fix on the first objects of his admiration. The rocks here are certainly the most striking objects. Their summits are almost perpetually involved in clouds. Some appear one solid mass of stone, from top to bottom. Others consist of various fragments, differently veined, like marble, with red, white, and yellow; and probably, were they sawed and polished, they might equal, if not excel, the finest specimens of Italy and Egypt.

On the southerly and westerly declivities of these rocks grow all the indigenous plants, herbs, and mosses: on the two other sides the wind strikes so cold that it destroys every principle of vegetation.

These plants arrive at maturity in a very short space. Till the middle of May, the whole country is locked up in ice; about the beginning of July, however, the plants are in blossom, and by the latter end of that month, or the commencement of the next, they have perfected their seed. The earth is fertilized, in a great measure, by the dung of fowls, which, after breeding their young here during the summer, repair to more favourable climes.

The plants most common in Spitsbergen, are scurvy-grass, and crowfoot; there are, besides, a
species

species of house-leek, an herb resembling stone-crop, snake-weed, mouse-ear, wood-strawberry, periwinkle, and a plant peculiar to the country, called the rock-plant. Its leaves are linguiform, about six feet long, and of a dull yellow. It is an aquatic, and therefore rises in height in proportion to the depth of water in which it is found. It smells somewhat like muscles. These are the principal plants and herbs: of flowers, the white poppy is predominant.

The rocks and precipices being full of fissures and clefts, which afford convenient shelter for the birds, they breed there in immense numbers. Most of these are water-fowl, and draw their food from the sea. There are; however, some rapacious birds, that prey on their own-kind; but these are few. The water-fowl eat strong and fishy, and their fat is not to be endured. They are so numerous, as sometimes to darken the air when they rise in flocks; and they scream so horribly, that the rocks ring with their noise.

There are a few small birds like our snipes, and a kind of snow-bird, but different from that found about Hudson's Bay.

The ice-bird is a very beautiful little bird, but very rare. He is, in size and shape, like a turtle-dove, but his plumage, when the sun shines upon him, is of a bright yellow, like the golden ring in the peacock's tail, and almost dazzles the eye to look upon it.

The other tenants of this forlorn country are, white bears, deer, and foxes. How these creatures can subsist in the winter, when the whole earth is covered with snow, and the sea locked up in ice, is hardly to be conceived. It has been said, indeed, that when the ocean is all frozen

over, and no sustenance to be procured in this country, they travel southerly to the warmer climates, where food, proper for them, abounds in the immense forests of the northern continent. But whoever considers the vast distance between Spitzbergen and the nearest parts of the northern continent, will be as much at a loss to account for the subsistence of these creatures in their journey, as in the desolate region where they undoubtedly remain. The bear is by far the best accommodated to the climate of which he is an inhabitant. He is equally at home on land and water, and hunts diligently for his prey in both. In summer he finds plenty of food from the refuse of the whales, sea-horses, and seals, which is thrown into the sea by the whalers, and covers the shores during the time of whaling; and he has besides a wonderful sagacity in smelling out the carcases of the dead, let them be ever so deeply buried in the earth, or covered with stones. But how he subsists in winter, is very difficult to be accounted for on any rational principle.

Disquisitions of this kind, as they are beyond the reach of human comprehension, serve only to raise our admiration of that Omnipotent Being, to whom nothing is impossible.

These creatures, as they differ in nothing but their colour and size, from those commonly shewn in England, need no description.

The foxes differ little in shape from those we are acquainted with, but in colour there is no similitude. Their heads are black, and their bodies white. As they are beasts of prey, if they do not provide in summer, for the long recess of winter, it were, one would think, almost impossible for them to survive; yet they are seen in
plenty,

plenty, though, by their subtilty and swiftness, they are not easy to be caught.

The Dutch seamen report, that when they are hungry they will feign themselves dead, and when the ravenous birds come to feed upon them, they rise and make them their prey.

But the most wonderful thing of all is, how the deer can survive an eight month's famine. Like ours, they feed upon nothing, that can be perceived, but the vegetables which the earth spontaneously produces; and yet for eight months in the year, the earth produces neither plant, herb, shrub, nor blade of any kind of grass whatever. They are besides, but thinly clothed for so severe a climate; and what seems still worse, there is not a bush to be seen to shelter them, within the distance that man has yet discovered. The means of their subsistence must therefore remain among the secrets of nature, never to be disclosed, as no human being can ever live here, so as to be able to trace these creatures to their winter's residence. It is known, however, that the rein-deer in Lapland subsist on the lichen, which they scrape for to a great depth in the snow. Analogy may here supply the place of demonstration.

Amphibious creatures abound the most about the sounds and bays of Spitsbergen, and they seem best adapted to endure the climate. These are the seals or sea-dogs, and morse, or sea-horses; of which the whalers avail themselves, when disappointed in completing their lading with the fat of whales.

The seal is sufficiently known; but the sea-horse, as it is a creature peculiar to high latitudes, is, therefore, more rare. It is not easy to say how he came by his name; for there is no

more likeness between a sea-horse and a land-horse, than there is between a whale and an elephant. The sea-horse is not unlike the seal in shape. He has a large round head, larger than that of a bull, but shaped more like that of a pug dog without ears, than any other animal we are acquainted with. He tapers all the way down to the tail, like the fish we call a lump, and his size is equal to that of the largest sized ox. His tusks close over his under jaw, like those of a very old boar, and are in length from one foot to two, or more, in proportion to the size and age of the animal. His skin is thicker than that of a bull, and covered with short, mouse-coloured hair, which is sleeker and thicker, just as he happens to be in or out of season, when he is caught. His paws, before and behind, are like those of a mole, and serve him for oars when he swims, and for legs to crawl when he goes upon the ice, or on shore. He is a fierce animal, but being unwieldy, when out of the water, is easily overcome.

These animals are always found in herds, sometimes of many hundreds together, and if one is attacked, the rest make a common cause, and stand by one another till the last gasp. If they are attacked in the water, they will fight desperately, and will even attempt the boats of their pursuers, if any of them are wounded, and not mortally. Some of them have been known to make holes in the bottom of the boat with their tusks, in defence of their young. Their eyes are large, and they have two holes in the upper part of the neck, out of which they eject the water, like whales.

Though the sea, about Spitzbergen, is full of *fish*, yet they rather appear to be designed by Providence

vidence for the sustenance of one another, than for the food of man. The mackarel, of which there are no great plenty, seem not only to be the most wholesome, and the most palatable, but also the most beautiful. They appear to be a different species from those caught upon our coasts. The upper part of the back is of a vivid blue; the other part as low as the belly of a gem-like green on an azure ground. Underneath the belly the colour is a transparent white, and the fins shine like polished silver. All the colours glow, when alive in the sea, with such a richness, that fancy can hardly form to itself any thing in nature more beautiful. Almost all the other fish on this coast are of an oily nature, and of a very indifferant flavour.

The saw, or sword-fish, is remarkable, not only for the singularity of his shape, but also for his enmity to the whale. This fish takes his name from a broad flat bone, in length from two to four feet, which projects from his nose, and tapers to a point. On each side, it has teeth like a comb, at the distance of a finger's breadth asunder. He is also furnished with a double row of fins, and is of astonishing strength in the water. His length is from ten to twenty feet. He seems to be formed for war, and war is his profession. The conflict betwixt him and the whale is dreadful, yet he never gives over till his sword is broken, or he comes off victorious.

The whale is a harmless fish, and is never known to fight but in his own defence. Yet when he is exasperated, he rages dreadfully. Though, from his magnitude, he may be called the sovereign of the seas; yet, he is liable to be vexed and hurt by the meanest reptiles. The

whale

whale's louse is a most tormenting little animal. Its scales are as hard as those of our prawns; its head is like the louse's head, with four horns, two that serve as feelers, the other two are hard, and curved, and serve as clenchers, to fix him to the whale. On his chest, underneath, he has two carvers, like scythes, with which he collects his food, and behind these are four feet, that serve him for oars. He has, moreover, six other clenchers behind, with which he can rivet himself so closely to his prey, that he can no other wise be disengaged, but by cutting out the whole piece to which he is fixed. He is jointed on the back like the tail of a lobster, and his tail covers him like a shield when he is feeding. He fixes himself on the tenderest parts of the whale's body, between his fins, on his sheath, and on his lips, and eats pieces out of his flesh.

They found no springs of fresh-water in Spitzbergen; but in the valleys, between the mountains, are many little rills, caused by the rain and melting of the snow in summer; and from these rills the ships are supplied. Some are of opinion that this water is unwholesome, but this does not appear to be the case. The whaling people have drunk of it for ages, and have found no ill effect from the use of it. Ice taken up in the middle of these seas, and thawed, yields also good fresh water.

On board the *Race Horse*, Dr. Irvine, who received the premium by grant of parliament, for his discovery of an easy process for making salt water fresh at sea, tried many experiments at Spitzbergen, and in the course of the voyage. That gentleman had formed a project for pre-
serving

serving flesh-meat fresh and sweet in long voyages, but it did not answer in this.

In calm weather it was remarked, that the sea about the islands appeared uncommonly still and smooth; that it was not suddenly moved at the first approach of blowing weather; but that when the storm continued, the waves swelled gradually, and rose to an incredible height.—These swelling waves successively follow one another, and roll along before the wind, foaming and raging in a frightful manner, yet they are thought less dangerous than those that break short, and are less mountainous.

It was observed likewise, that the ice that rested on the ground was not stationary, but that it changed place; and they learnt also, that in some seasons there was no ice, where this season they were in danger of being embayed. There does not, however, from thence appear the least reason to conclude, that any practicable passage to the Indian Ocean can ever be found in this direction; for were it certain that the seas were always open under the pole, yet great bulwarks of ice evidently surround it, sometimes at a less, and sometimes at a greater distance. Moreover, were it possible that chance should direct some fortunate adventurer to an opening at one time, it would be more than a million to one, if the same opening were passable to the next who should attempt it.

There are many harbours about Spitsbergen, besides that of Smearingburgh, where ships employed in the whale fishery take shelter in stormy weather; and there are some islands, such as Charles's Island, the Clifted Rock, Red-Hill, Hacluit's Headland, &c. that serve as land-marks,

by which seamen direct their course. These islands are full of the nests of birds; but their eggs are as nauseous as the flesh of the fowls that lay them. The sailors sometimes eat them, but they are filthy food. Even the geese and ducks, on the neighbouring islands, eat fishy and strong.

The air about Spitsbergen is never free from icicles. If a person looks through the sun-beams transversely, as he sits in the shade, or where the rays are confined in a body, instead of dark motes, as are seen here, myriads of shining particles are observed, that sparkle like diamonds; and when the sun shines hot, as it sometimes does, so as to melt the tar in the seams of ships, these shining atoms seem to melt away, and descend like dew.

It is seldom that the air continues clear for many days together, in this climate; when that happens, the whalers are generally successful. There is no difference between night and day, in the appearance of the atmosphere about Spitsbergen, one being as light as the other, only when the sun is to the northward, he may be looked at with the naked eye, as at the moon, without dazzling. The fogs here come on so suddenly, that from bright sun-shine, the deepest obscurity sometimes takes place in an instant.

While our journalist was busy in making his observations, all belonging to the ships were differently engaged, in one employment or other, either of business or pleasure. The commanders and officers, with Mr. Lyon the astronomer, busied themselves in making observations, being furnished with an excellent apparatus. They landed their instruments on a small island, in Vogle Sound, and had several opportunities dur-
ing

ing their stay, of using them to advantage. Having erected two tents, the captains from the fishery frequently visited the observers, and expressed their admiration, not only at the perfection of the instruments, but likewise at the dexterity with which they were accommodated.

The ice began to set in apace, yet the weather was hot. The thermometer, from fifty-six in the cabin, rose to ninety in the open air. It was still ten degrees higher on the top of a mountain to which it was carried. The island on which the experiments were made, they called Marble Island, from the rock by which it is formed. Having watered, and finished their observations, the ships prepared to depart.

July the 19th, the commodore made the signal to weigh; at two in the afternoon the ships were under sail. At three they tacked and steered northward; and before four were again entangled in the loose ice, through which they sailed, directing their course along the main body, which lay from north-west to south-south-east.

Next day they continued their course along the ice, but could discover no opening, though they searched every creek, and left no bay or turning unexamined. This day they observed what the sailors call a mock-sun, a phenomenon well enough known in this climate.

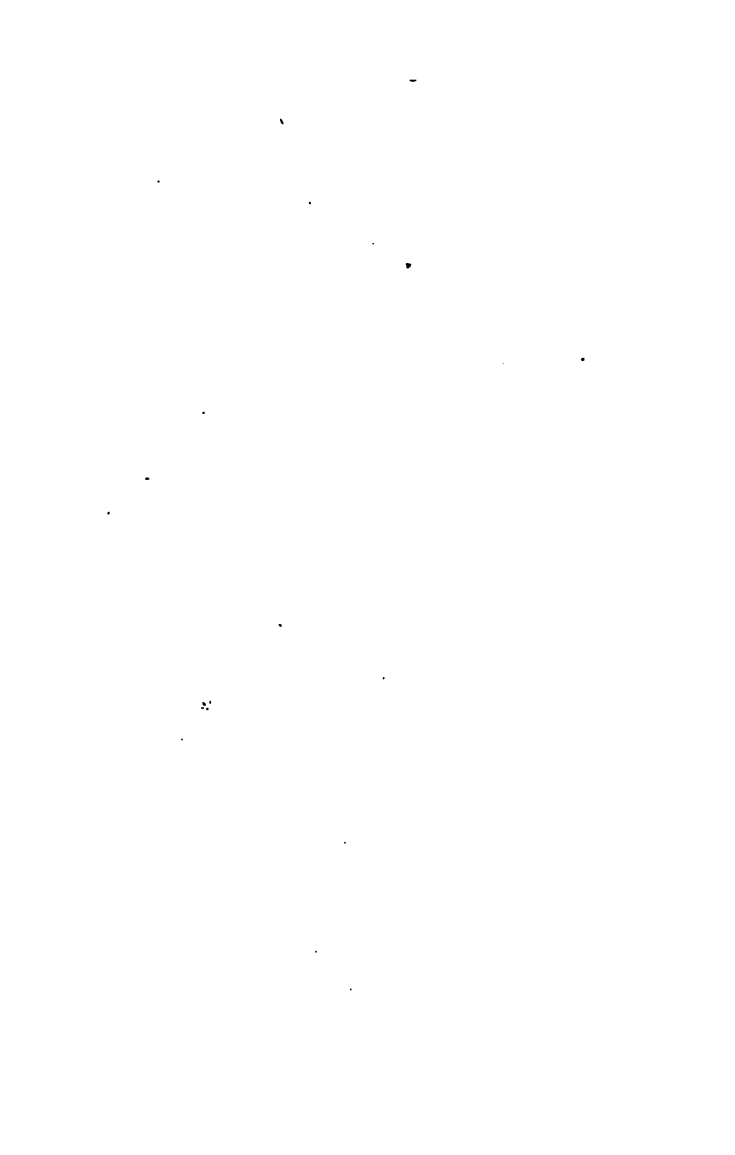
On the 21st, the severity of the weather increasing, an additional quantity of brandy was served out to the people, and every comfortable refreshment afforded them, that they themselves could wish or require. The course of the ice lay this day north-east,

The two following days presented nothing remarkable.

On the 25th, they had gentle breezes, with cloudy weather, and were engaged among some pieces of ice, which kept them continually tacking and luffing. At length they entered among mountains and islands of ice, which came upon them so fast, that it was with the utmost difficulty they could proceed; the Carcase having several times struck against them with such violence, as to raise her head four feet out of the water. They now imagined, from the solidity and extent of these islands, that the late strong gales had caused a separation from the main body, the commodore therefore changed his course with a strong gale to the eastward; in the morning the weather became moderate.

Next day, at seven in the morning, they came in sight of Red-hill, a small mount which commands an open plain, known by the name of Deers-field, by reason of its fertile appearance, it being the only spot on which they saw no drift of snow. In the vicinity lay Muffin's Island. Captain Lutwych sent out the long-boat, with orders to sound along the shore, and to examine the soil. This island is about a mile long, very low, and looks at a distance like a black speck. Though the soil is mostly sand and loose stones and hardly so much as a green weed upon it, yet it is remarkable for the number of birds that resort to it in summer to lay their eggs, which were so thick upon the ground, that the men who landed found it difficult to walk without filling their shoes.

While the crew of the boat, ten in number with their officer at their head, were examining the island after having sounded the shores, they observed two white bears making towards them



to see them about him, but frightened at the bear just behind him, he had forgotten the gander that was over his head, against which one of the men having levelled his piece, fired, and he fell dead at the major's feet. Animated now by the death of one enemy, he recovered his gun, and faced about to assist in the attack of the second. By this time the bear was scarce ten yards from him, and beginning to growl, the officer dropped his accoutrements, and fell back. The crew in an instant had brought down the bear, and now it was time for their leader to do something great. Having recovered his arms, and seeing the poor beast grovelling on the ground, and growling out his last, he thrust his lance full four feet deep into the dying bear's belly. The cowardice of the chief was very entertaining to his party; he took to the boat, while a few of them remained to dispatch the other bear.

On this island they likewise killed a sea-horse. The sea-horse made a desperate defence, being attacked in the water; and had there been only one boat engaged in the combat, he certainly would have come off victorious; but the crew of the Race Horse having learnt that there were bears and sea-horses on this little spot, were willing to share in the sport of hunting them, as well as in the pleasure of tasting their flesh. They accordingly landed in their boats, and came in good time to assist in pursuing the conquest. It happened, however, that their ammunition being almost spent, one great bear came up to revenge the death of his fellows, and advanced so furiously, growling and barking, that he put *the whole company* to flight, and some of them,

it is said, had no great reason to laugh at their leader.

The air being perfectly serene, and the weather moderate, on the 27th, the fishes seemed to enjoy the temperature, and to express it by their sporting. The whales were seen spouting their fountains towards the skies, and the fin-fish following their example. They likewise this day saw dolphins; the whole prospect in short was more pleasing and picturesque than they had yet beheld in this remote region. The very ice in which they were beset looked beautiful, and put forth a thousand glittering forms, and the tops of the mountains, which they could see like sparkling gems at a vast distance, had the appearance of so many silver stars illuminating a new firmament. But this flattering prospect did not continue long. By an accurate observation, they were now in latitude 80 deg. 47 min. north; and in longitude 21 deg. 10 min. east from London; and in sight of seven islands to the north, to which they directed their course.

Next day they had fresh easterly breezes, which, from moderate weather the day before, changed to piercing cold. At midnight the west end of Weygate Straights bore south by east, so that they were now in the very spot where Barentz had supposed an opening would be found into the polar sea. Yet so far from it, they could discover nothing from the masthead but a continued continent of solid ice, except the islands already mentioned. On this ice, however, there were many bears, some of which came so near the ships, as to be shot dead with small-arms. These bears are very good eating; and many of them are larger than the largest oxen. In most parts

of their body they are musket proof, and unless they are hit on the open chest, or on the flank, a blow with a musket ball will hardly make them turn their backs. Some of the bears killed in these encounters weighed from seven to eight hundred weight; and it was thought, that the bear that routed the sailors on Muffin's Island, could not weigh less than a thousand weight. He was, indeed, a very monster!

On the 29th, sailing among innumerable islands of ice, they found the main body too solid for the ships to make the least impression upon it, and finding no opening, the commodore resolved to send a party under the command of the first lieutenant, to examine the land, which at a distance appeared like a plain, diversified with hills and mountains, and exhibited in their situation a tolerable landscape.

On trying the water, it was less salt than any sea water they had ever tasted; and they found likewise, that the ice was no other than a body of congealed fresh water, which they imagined had been frozen in the infancy of the earth.

The succeeding day, the weather being clear, they ran close to the main body of the ice, and the sun continuing to shine, made them almost forget the climate they were sailing in; but it was not long before they had reason for severe recollection. In coasting along, they observed many openings, and were in hopes, from their distant appearance, that a passage might be made between them; but upon trial it was found, that these appearances were deceitful. They were then about four miles distant from the nearest land.

On the last day of the month, the Carcase hoisted out her cutter, and filled her empty water-casks with water from the ice. On this ice lie great quantities of snow, and as soon as a pit is dug, it fills with fine, soft, clear water, not inferior to that of many land springs. At noon they sounded in ninety-five fathoms, the ground soft mud. This day a bear came over the ice to visit them, the first they had seen since they left Muffin's Island. They saluted him with a volley of small-arms, and he returned the compliment, by turning his back upon them.

August 1st proved a day of trial. Lying to among the close ice, with the loose ice driving fast to shore, the commodore was desirous of surveying the westernmost of the seven islands, which appeared the highest, in order to judge, from the prospect on the hills, of the possibility of proceeding farther on the discovery. With this view they carried out their ice-anchors, and made both ships fast to the main body, a practice very common with the fishing ships that annually frequent those seas. Of the reconnoitring party, were the captains, the second lieutenants, one of the mathematicians, the pilots, and some chosen sailors, selected from both ships. They set out about two in the morning, and sometimes sailing, sometimes drawing their boats over the ice, they with difficulty reached the shore, where the first objects they saw were a herd of deer, so very tame, that they might have been killed with the thrust of a bayonet; a proof that animals are not naturally afraid of man, till, by the fate of their associates, they are taught the danger of approaching them; a proof too, that animals are not destitute of reflection, otherwise how should they conclude, that

what has befallen their fellow animals, will certainly happen to them, if they run the like risk. The gentlemen, however, suffered only one of these fearless innocents to be fired at, and that was done by a sailor when they were absent on observation.

On this island they gathered some scurvy-grass, and in many places they could perceive the sides of the hills covered with verdure.

After having ascended the highest hills on the sea-coast, and taken a view of the country and the ocean all round, the gentlemen descended, and about five in the afternoon embarked again on their return to the ships, at which they arrived safe about ten, after an absence of twenty hours. They were greatly disappointed by the haziness of the weather on the tops of the mountains, which confined the prospect, and prevented their taking an observation with the instruments they had carried with them for that purpose.

Their situation now began to be serious, and it was discovered too late, that by grappling to the ice, as practised by the Greenlandmen, they had endangered the loss of the ships, the loose ice closing so fast about them, that they found it absolutely impossible to get them disengaged; and there was, besides, great reason to fear, that one or both would soon be crushed to pieces. Great minds are ever most distinguished by their expedients on the most alarming occasions. The commodore set all hands to work, to form a dock in the solid ice, large enough to moor both ships; and by the alacrity with which that service was performed, the ships were preserved from the danger of immediate destruction.

The ships being thus far secured, the officers, pilots, and masters, were all summoned on board the commodore, to consult on what farther was to be done in their present unpromising situation : when it was unanimously agreed, that their deliverance was hopeless ; and that they must either provide to winter upon the adjacent islands, or attempt to launch their boats into the open sea, which was already at a considerable distance ; for the loose ice had poured into the bay in which they were at anchor with so much rapidity, and in such astonishing quantities, that the open sea was already far out of sight. Before any thing farther was undertaken, the men were ordered to their quarters, that they might refresh themselves with sleep.

While their commanders preserve their fortitude, the sailors never lose their courage. They rose in the morning with as much alacrity and unconcern as if they had been sailing with a fine breeze in the British Channel.

Next day it was thought advisable to make one desperate attempt to extricate the ships, by cutting a channel to the westward into the open sea. The scooping out the dock with so much expedition, by a party only of one ship, raised high expectations of what might be performed by the united labours of both the crews. No body of men ever undertook a work of such difficulty with so much cheerfulness and confidence of success, as the sailors displayed on this occasion. Their ice-saws, axes, sledges, poles, and the whole group of sea-tools, were in an instant all employed in facilitating the work ; but after cutting through blocks of solid ice from eight to fifteen feet deep, and coming to others of many fathoms,
that

that exceeded the powers of man to separate, this project was laid aside as hopeless.

On the 3d of August, after the men had again refreshed themselves with sleep, it was resolved to fit up the boats belonging to both the ships with such coverings as were most easy to be accommodated, and of lightest conveyance; and by skating them over the ice, endeavour to launch them in the open sea. Could this be effected, they hoped, that by sailing and rowing to the northernmost harbour of Spitzbergen, they might arrive at that island, before the departure of the last ships belonging to the fishery for Europe.

While the boats were getting ready for this expedition, a second party was dispatched to the island, with orders to take the distance, as exact as it was possible, to the nearest open sea. As all the people belonging to the ships were not to be engaged in these services, those who were unemployed, diverted themselves in hunting and killing the bears, that now, attracted perhaps by the savory smell of the provisions dressed on board the ships, came every day over the ice to repeat their visits. Several of these were killed occasionally, and this day they fought a sea-horse, in which engagement the second lieutenant of the *Carcase* signalized his courage in a most desperate rencounter, in which, however, he succeeded, though his life was in imminent danger.

On the 4th, the artificers were still employed in fitting up the boats. The pilots, who the day before had been sent to make observations on the islands already mentioned, made their report, that the nearest water they had seen was about ten leagues to the westward; that in their passage *they had met with great numbers of spars or pine*

pine trees, floating about the island; some of them of considerable size. As there was neither tree nor shrub to be seen growing on any of the seven islands, nor upon any land that they had yet discovered in that latitude, nor for ten degrees farther south, it was evident the trees they had seen must have come from a great distance.

Though there is nothing new in this observation, the like being annually observed by all the navigators who frequent those seas in the summer, and who collect their wood from those drifts, yet the country whence they proceed has hitherto been thought a mystery. But it being now certain, that many of the great rivers that flow through the northernmost parts of Russia, empty themselves into this sea; and that there is an open communication throughout the different parts of it at different seasons of the year, there seems very little reason to doubt, but that those trees are torn up by land floods, and are precipitated into the sea by the rapidity of the streams.

The ice still surrounding them, and appearing to grow more and more solid and fixed, those who had till now retained hopes that the south-east wind would again disunite its substance, and open a passage for their deliverance, began to despair, as the wind had blown for twenty-four hours from that quarter, from which alone they could have relief, and not the least alteration to be perceived.

Early in the morning of the 5th, the man at the masthead of the *Carcase* gave notice, that three bears were making their way very fast over the ice, and that they were directing their course towards the ship. They had, without question,

been invited by the scent of the blubber of the sea-horse killed a few days before, which the men had set on fire, and which was burning on the ice at the time of their approach. They proved to be a she bear and her two cubs, nearly full grown. They ran eagerly to the fire, and drew out from the flames part of the flesh of the sea-horse that remained unconsumed, and eat it voraciously. The crew from the ship, by way of diversion, threw out great lumps of the flesh of the sea-horse which they had still left, which the old bear fetched away singly, laid each lump before her cubs as she brought it, and dividing it, gave each a share, reserving but a small portion to herself. As she was fetching away the last piece they had to bestow, they levelled their muskets at the cubs, and shot them both dead; and in her retreat, they also wounded the dam, but not mortally. It would have drawn tears of pity from any but unfeeling minds, to have marked the affectionate concern expressed by this poor beast, in the dying moments of her expiring young. Though she was sorely wounded, and could but just crawl to the place where they lay, she carried the lump of flesh she had fetched away, as she had done the others before, tore it in pieces, and laid it down before them, and when she saw that they refused to eat, she laid her paws first upon one, and then upon the other, and endeavoured to raise them up. All this while she made the most pitiful moans. When she found she could not stir them, she went off, and when she had got at some distance, looked back and moaned; and that not availing her, she returned, and smelling round them, began to lick their wounds. She *went off* a second time as before, and *having*
crawled

crawled a few paces, looked again behind her, and for some time stood moaning. But still her cubs not rising to follow her, she returned to them again, and with signs of inexpressible fondness, went round one and round the other, pawing them, and expressing her distress. Finding at last that they were cold and lifeless, she raised her head towards the ship, and seemed to growl a curse upon the murderers, which they returned with a volley of musket-balls. She fell between her cubs, and died licking their wounds. If what is related by a voyager of credit in the last century be true, the filial fondness of these animals, however, is no less remarkable than the maternal.

On the 6th, they discovered that the drift of the ship, with the whole body of ice, inclined fast to the eastward; and that they were already embayed in the very middle of the seven islands. They therefore sent off the pilots of both ships, with a party of sailors to the northernmost island, to see what discoveries could be made from the promontories there. They returned at night, after a fatiguing journey, with a dismal account, that nothing was to be seen from thence but a vast continent of ice, of which there was no end; and that the thought of wintering in such a situation was more dreadful, than that of perishing by instant death.

Next day the boats were all brought in readiness on the ice, fitted with weather clothes, in order to keep off the cold as much as possible, if by good fortune they should be enabled to launch them in an open sea. They were employed chiefly in preparing provisions for the intended voyage; and in packing up such necessities as every one

could take along with him. This being adjusted, when night approached they were all ordered on board to sleep.

At six in the morning all hands were ordered to turn out, and a détachment of fifty men from each ship, headed by their respective officers, were appointed to begin the hard task of hauling the launches along the ice. The bravest and gallantest actions performed in war, do not so strikingly mark the true character of a sea commander, as the readiness and alacrity with which his orders are obeyed in times of imminent danger. Every one now strove who should have the honour to be lifted in the band of haulers, of whom the commodore took the direction, leaving Captain Lutwych to take care of both the ships, that if any favourable turn should happen in the disposition of the ice, he might make use of the remaining part of both the crews to improve it. Upon a general consultation of officers, previous to this undertaking, it had been agreed, and an order issued accordingly, that no person on board, of whatever rank, should encumber himself with more clothes than what he wore upon his back. Upon this occasion, therefore, the officers dressed themselves in flannels, and the common men put on the clothes which the officers had thrown off, which gave them a very grotesque appearance; but it seemed the two companies to a man preserved their wonted composure. That headed by the commodore drew stoutly for the honour of their leader, and that headed by their lieutenants had their music to play to them, were deservedly beloved as well as their commanders, particularly Lieutenant Beard, whose steady and uniform conduct in times of the greatest danger, ac-
cording

according to our journalist, did honour to human nature. Neither swayed by passion, nor disconcerted by the sudden embarrassments that often intervened, his conduct was always calm, and his orders resolute. He never was heard, during the whole voyage, on the most pressing emergencies, to enforce his commands with an oath, or to call a sailor by any other than his usual name; and so sensible were they of his manly behaviour, that, when the ship was paid off at Deptford, they were only prevented by his most earnest request from stripping themselves to their shirts, to cover the streets with their clothes, that he might not tread in the dirt in going to take coach. An anecdote of this kind we are happy to preserve.

In six hours, with the utmost efforts of human labour, they had only proceeded a single mile; and now it was time for them to dine, which they did in common.

They had just begun to renew their labour, when word was brought, that the whole body of ice had changed its situation, and was moving to the westward; that the ships were both afloat; and that the ice was parting. The joy which this news diffused through the two companies of haulers is easier to conceive than express. They instantly shook off their harness, ran to assist in working the ships, and once more to resume their proper employments. When they arrived at the ships, Captain Lutwyche, who was no less beloved by his men than the commodore, had by his example and his judicious directions done wonders. Both ships were not only afloat, with their sails set, but actually cut and warped through the ice near half a mile. This ray of hope, however, was soon darkened; the body of

ice suddenly assumed its former direction to the eastward, and closed upon them again as fast as ever.

For the remainder of the evening, and till two in the morning, the drift continued eastward, and all that while the ships were in danger of being crushed by the closing of the channel in which they rode. They had now drifted two miles to the eastward; the men were worn out with fatigue in defending the ships with their ice-poles from being engulfed; and now nothing but scenes of horror and perdition appeared before their eyes. But the Omnipotent, in the very moment, when every hope of deliverance from their own united endeavours had relinquished them, interposed in their favours, and caused the winds to blow, and the ice to part in an astonishing manner, rending and cracking with a tremendous noise, surpassing that of the loudest thunder. At this very instant, the whole continent of ice, which before was extended beyond the reach of sight from the highest mountains, moved together in various directions, splitting and dividing into vast bodies, and forming hills and plains of various figures and dimensions. All hearts were now again revived, and the prospect of being once more released from the frozen chains of the north, inspired the men with fresh vigour. The sails were all spread in an instant, that the ships might have the full advantage of the breeze, to force them through the channels that were already opened, and to help them to pierce the clefts that were but just cracking.

While the major part of the crews were employed in warping the ships with ice-anchors, axes, saws, and poles, a party from both ships

were dispatched to launch the boats. This was no easy task to accomplish. The ice, though split in many thousand pieces, was yet frozen like an island round the launches, and though it was of no great extent, yet the boats were of a weight hardly to be moved by the small force that could be spared. They were besides, by the driving of the ice, at more than five miles distance from the ships; and at this time no channels of communication were yet opened. But providence was once more signalized in their favour; for the island on which the launches stood, parted while the men were hauling them, and they escaped without the loss of a man, though the ice cracked, as it were, under their feet.

The people on board had not been able to force their way with the ships much more than a mile, when the party in the launches joined them. And now, excited by what curiosity or instinct is not easy to determine, several bears came posting over the ice to be spectators of their departure, and advanced so near the ships, that they might have been easily mastered, had not the men been more seriously employed.

The breeze continuing fresh from the eastward, the ice seemed to open as fast as it had before closed, when the wind blew westerly, and from the north; a strong presumptive proof of land to the eastward, which stopping the current of the loose ice in driving from the north and west, closes it in of course, and renders it compact.

As the wind on the 10th was variable, they could make but little progress. The ice, in the morning early, seemed rather to close upon them, than to divide. About eight the breeze sprang up fresh from the north-east, exceedingly cold,

but opening the ice to the westward. They then made all the sail they could, driving with the loosening ice, and parting it wherever it was moveable with their whole force. Towards noon they lost sight of the Seven Islands. And in a very little while after, to their great joy, Spitzbergen was seen from the masthead.

The succeeding day, the men who, with hard labour, cold, and watching, were much dispirited, on the prospect of a speedy deliverance, and seeing the ice no longer adhere in immoveable bodies, began, after a little refreshment, to resume their wonted cheerfulness. The moment they were released from their icy prison, and that they were within sight of a clear sea, festivity and jollity took place of abstinence and gloomy apprehensions; and before they arrived at Spitzbergen, there was not a sailor on board with a serious face.

The ice that had parted from the main body, they had now time to admire. As it no longer obstructed their course, the various shapes in which the broken fragments appeared, were indeed very curious and amusing. One remarkable piece described a magnificent arch, so large and completely formed, that a sloop of considerable burden might have sailed through it without lowering her mast; another represented a church with windows and pillars, and domes; and a third, a table, with icicles hanging round it like the fringes of a damask cloth. A fertile imagination would have found entertainment enough; for the similitude of all that art or nature has ever yet produced, might here have been fancied.

They continued working all this day through the loose ice; Hacluit's Headland bearing south; and in their course saw a Dutch Greenlandman.

The 12th, they cleared the ice, and bore away with all sails set for the harbour of Smearingburgh, in which they had before cast anchor. Here they found four Dutch Greenlandmen lying in readiness to depart. These Dutchmen acquainted the commodore, that all the English fishing ships set sail on the 10th of July, the day to which they are obliged, by contract, to stay, to entitle their owners to receive the bounty-money allowed by parliament for the encouragement of that fishery.

About the same time the greatest part of the Dutch set sail likewise from Spitzbergen, on their voyage home; but it is a practice with these last, to take it by turns to wait till the severity of the weather obliges them to leave the coast, in order to pick up such men as may by accident have lost their ships in the ice; and who, notwithstanding, may have had the good fortune to save their lives by means of their boats. This is a very humane institution, and does credit to the Dutch government.

The day of our voyagers return to Smearingburgh Harbour being fine, the commodore ordered a tent to be raised on the lower point to the south-west, where there was a level plain for the space of two miles, and where all the mathematical apparatus were again taken on shore for a second trial.

They found, on the examination of the vibration of the pendulum, that it differed from that at Greenwich, by Harrison's time-keeper, only two seconds in forty-eight hours; which time-

keeper, at their arrival at Greenwich, varied only one second and a half from the time-pieces at the observatory there.

The people were now fully employed in repairing the ships and rigging, and taking in water for the remainder of the voyage.

On the 17th, vast pieces of broken ice, supposed to have fallen from the icebergs, came floating into harbour. When these pieces, which are undermined by the continual agitation of the sea in stormy weather, lose their support, they tumble with a crack that surpasses the loudest thunder; but they were told, that no other thunder was ever heard in this latitude.

During the six days which the ships anchored here to make observations, refresh the men, and refit, our journalist made several excursions to the adjoining islands, where the birds appeared in astonishing numbers; it being the season for bringing forth their young.

Of all the birds that breed in these islands, the burgermaster is the largest, and the most ravenous; he is so called by the Dutch, from his size and his authority, as he holds all the other birds in subjection. His bill is long and crooked, rather like that of the stork, than that of the hawk, and is of a yellow colour. He has a red ring about his eyes; is web-footed, but has only three claws on each foot. His wings are of a beautiful pearl colour, edged with white; his back a silver grey; his body white as snow, and his tail of the same colour, which, when he flies, he spreads like a fan. He builds his nest very high in the rocks, inaccessible either to bears or foxes. He preys upon all the other birds, and eats the carrion of fish or flesh, or whatever comes in
his

His cry is horrible, and when he the mallemuch, a bird as large as a duck, is intimidated, that she will sink down, and devour him without opposition. A naturalist found it very dangerous to pursue over the hills and precipices in this rugged country. The clefts on the mountains are deep on the ice, frequently impassable; but are abundantly more hazardous, being sometimes concealed under the snow, so that a traveller is gulphed before he is aware. Many have perished in these clefts, and perished in the arms of their companions, without a possibility of rescue. To a contemplative mind, however, the deformities of nature are not displeasing, the power of the Creator being manifest in all his works.

On the 19th of August the ships unmoored, and on the next day they cleared the harbour. Finding it impossible to make any farther progress in the discovery, it was now resolved to return. On the 22d, they were in latitude 80 deg. north, longitude 5 deg. 44 min. east, the Carcase, being the heaviest sailer, lost the commodore; but on the evening returned, and they pursued their voyage without interruption till the 11th of September, when a gale separated them, and they did not sight of each other till they arrived off Deptford on the 30th of September. The expedition ended a voyage, which seems to have settled the long-agitated question concerning

the navigation to the north pole, and verified the assertion of Captain Wood, that no passage could ever be found practicable in that direction.

From the quantities of ice which that navigator met with in latitude 76 deg. north, he concluded, indeed erroneously, that the 80th degree would bound the progress of ships in that course; and that from thence the polar region was either a continued continent of solid ice, or that land filled up the intermediate space.

Subsequent discoveries, however, have shewn that those seas are navigable as far as the 82d degree of latitude; and in some years it may possibly happen that they will be found open a degree or two farther; but it may, from this voyage, as well as the last undertaken by Captain Cook, be reasonably concluded, that a north-east course to the Indies can never be pursued for any commercial purposes.

It has indeed been incontestibly proved that such a passage actually exists, and that by watching favourable seasons it may be performed; but who would think of exposing men and property to such a doubtful issue, when a certain and speedy communication with the eastern regions at all times lies open!

This country, therefore, under the reign of his present majesty, will for ever have the honour of ascertaining the limits of the globe, and the extent of navigation. And how far ships can sail, or man exist, is now disclosed to the rest of the world by adventurous Britons.

[REDACTED]



[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

